Gift of

DR. FREDERICK M. BAYER
THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF PETER WILKINS, A CORNISH MAN.

TAKEN FROM HIS OWN MOUTH, IN HIS PASSAGE TO ENGLAND, FROM OFF CAPE HORN IN AMERICA, IN THE SHIP HECTOR.

BY R. S. A PASSENGER IN THE HECTOR.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.
MDCC LXXXIII.
TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

Elizabeth, Countess of Northumberland.

MADAM,

FEW authors, I believe, who write in my way, (whatever view they may set out with) can, in the prosecution of their work, forbear to dress their fictitious characters in the real ornaments themselves have been most delighted with.

This, I confess, hath been my case, in the person of Yourwarkee, in the following sheets; for having formed her body, I found myself at an inexpressible loss how to adorn her mind in the matterly sentiments I coveted to endue her with, till I recollected the most amiable pattern in your ladyship; a single view of which, at a time of the utmost fatigue to his lordship, hath charmed my imagination ever since.

If a participater of the cares of life in general alleviates the concerns of man, what an invaluable blessing must that lady prove, to the softness of whose sex nature hath conjoined an aptitude for council, an application, zeal, and dispatch, but too rarely found in his own!

Had my situation in life been so happy as to have presented me with opportunities of more frequent and minuter remarks upon your ladyship's conduct, I might have defied the whole British fair to have outshone my southern Gawry; for if to a majestick form and extensive capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural sweetness of disposition, that maternal tenderness, that cheerfulness, that complacency, condescension, affability, and unaffected benevolence, which so apparently distinguish the Countess of Northumberland; I had exhibited in my Youwarkee a standard for future generations.

Madam, I am the more sensible of my speaking but the truth, from the late instance of your benignity, which entitles me to the honour of subscribing myself,

Madam,

Your Ladyship's

Most obliged and

Most obedient Servant,

R. P,
EXPLANATION OF

-Names and Things mentioned in this Work.

A.
ABB—a room.
Abalo—capital of Norbon.
Arco—a man who committed the first murder.
Arrdrumnslake—Pendlehamby's colymbat.
Arko—water surrounded with wood.
Barbara—Georigetti's favourite.
Barfati—a husband.
Barra—a leather apron, or flap behind.
Bafl—a valet de chambre.
Barringdrigg—the name of an arko.
Bergferbeck—an old king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Boraflies—lands to the right-hand.
Boflee—a very grand room, or balloon.
Bott—a gourd.
Bougee—the down.
Brandeguart—chief city of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.

B.
Barharfa—Georigelli's favourite.
Barkizt—a huffbind.
Barras—a leathern apron, or flap behind.
Bajh—a valet de chambre.
Battr'ingdrigg—the name of an arko.
Begfurbeck—an old king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Borniflands to the right-hand.
Bfylkes—a very grand room, or balloon.
Bolt—a goat.
Bouges—lie down.
Brandeguart—chief city of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Callentar—a doctor, or surgeon.
Chiff—a captain.
Colamb—a governor.
Colambat—a government.
Colapat—a bag for provision.
Colizvar—God.
Coesetti—a man's house or seat.
Cragbdoorpt—Quangrallett's colymbat, or country of the slit.
Crebsee—slit.
Crullinin—a fruit tasting like a fowl.
David—Peter's fourth son.
Doorpt Swangeanti—the land of flight.
Doors—a sort of apples.
Duffe—a soft thing.

C.
Emin—a rock.
F.
Felbambko—Oniwniefke's nephew.
Filgay—a freeman.
Filus—a rib of the grandee.
Gads—governor of Mount Alkoe.

Gaininggrunt—a revolted town in the west.
Gawrey—a flying woman.
Georigetti—king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Glanlipoe—an African who escaped with Peter.
Glum—a flying man.
Glumn Boff—a young man.
Goppa—a father-in-law.
Gorbell—an ensign.
Gowress—a woman.
Grandees—the glumms wings and dres.
Grippdock—a trumpet.
Graundevoilet—Peter's arko.
Gume—the leather between the flifes of the grandee.

H.
Hallycornis—Youwarkee's sister, also her second daughter.
Harkim—prince of the rebels.
Hoximo—a place to bury the dead.
Hunkum—marriage.

I.
I. O.—the chief ragam.

J.
Jahans—the king's sister.
Jemmy—Peter's second son.

L.
Lalli—first king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Laff—a slave.
Lafkinert—slavery.
Lajmeez—Peter's scholar.

M.
Maleck—Peter's man from Mount Alkoe.
Mindrack—the devil.
Moube—church.
Moucheratt—an assembly of the states.
Mount Alkoe—a kingdom taking name from a burning mountain.

N.
Nafig—a common soldier made a general at the request of Peter.
Nicor—a creature of Barbarfa, the king's favourite.
Norbon—the name of the north country.

Normbdljgreffatt
Normnb Jurflutt—ancient name of Youwarkee's country.

Oniwheske—king of Norbon.

Ors clam gee—here am I.

Padfi—a fruit tasting like fish.

Palang—a town.

Parky—sweet.

Patty—Peter's eldest daughter, also his first wife.

Pedro—Peter's eldest son.

Peter—the author.

Pendlehamby—Youwarkee's father, the colamb of Arndrumnflate.

Perigen—the first-born man.

Philella—the first-born woman.

Puly—an image.

Praave—modest.

Quangrollart—Youwarkee's brother, colamb of Craishdoorpt.

Quilly—Peter's bath.

Ragan—a priest.

Rozy—mighty.

Richard—Peter's fifth son.

Roppin—marmalade.

Rojig—Quangrallort's companion.

Sary—Peter's youngest daughter.

Sfs Doorpt Swangeanti—Peter's new name given to Georigetti's dominions.

Slip the graundee—drawing the graundee tight to the body, by a running noose on a line.

Stapps—minutes.

Stygee—Oniwheske's daughter.

Sweecoe—an insect giving a strong light in the dark.

Sweecoan—a flight with sweecoes.

Swangean—flight.

Telamine—a woman, whose husband committed the first murder.

Tommy—Peter's second son.

Tacombourse—the king's mistress.

Yacom—a man child.

Youk—capital of the west.

Youwarkee—Peter's wife.

Zaps—lords.
THE

INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the life of another, to trouble the reader with any of my own concerns, or the affairs that led me into the South Seas. Therefore, I shall only acquaint him, that in my return on board the Hector, as a passenger, round Cape Horn, for England, full late in the season, the wind and currents setting strong against us, our ship drove more southerly, by several degrees, than the usual course, even to the latitude of 75 or 76; when the wind chopping about, we began to resume our intended way. It was about the middle of June, when the days are there at the shortest, on a very flarry and moon-light night, that we observed at some distance a very black cloud, but seemingly of no extraordinary size or height, moving very fast towards us, and seeming to follow the ship, which then made great way. Every one on deck was very curious in observing its motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and presently to close again, and not to continue long in any determined shape, our captain, who had never before been so far to the southward as he then found himself, had many conjectures what this phenomenon might portend; and every one offering his own opinion, it seemed at last to be generally agreed, that there might possibly be a storm gathering in the air, of which this was the prognoftic; and by its following, and nearly keeping pace with us, we were in great fear lest it should break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our commander, therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the ship's guns to be fired, to try if the percussion of the air would disperse it. This was no sooner done, than we heard a prodigious flouncle in the water, at but a small distance from the ship, on the weather-quarter, and after a violent noise, or cry in the air, the cloud, that upon our firing dissipated, seemed to return again, but by degrees disappeared. Whilst we were all very much surprized at this unexpected accident, I, being naturally very curious and inquisitive into the causes of all unusual incidents, begged the captain to send the boat, to see, if possible, what it was that had fallen from the cloud, and offered myself to make one in her. He was much against this at first, as it would retard his voyage, now we were going so smoothly before the wind. But in the midst of our debate, we plainly heard a voice calling out for help, in our own tongue, like a person in great distress. I then insisted on going, and not suffering a fellow-creature to perish for the sake of a trifling delay. In compliance with my resolute demand, he flackened sail; and hoisting out the boat, myself and seven others made to the cry; and soon found it to come from an elderly man, labouring for life, with his
INTRODUCTION.

arms across several long poles, of equal size at both ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd manner. The sailors at first were very fearful of afflicting, or coming near him; crying to each other, ‘He * must be a monster!’ and, perhaps, might overset the boat and destroy them; but hearing him speak English, I was very angry with them for their foolish apprehensions, and caused them to clap their oars under him, and at length we got him into the boat. He had an extravagant beard, and also long blackish hair upon his head. As soon as he could speak, (for he was almost spent) he very familiarly took me by the hand, I having set myself close by him to observe him, and squeezing it, thanked me very kindly for my civility to him, and likewise thanked all the sailors. I then asked him by what possible accident he came there; but he shook his head, declining to satisfy my curiosity. Hereupon reflecting that it might just then be troublesome for him to speak, and that we should have leisure enough in our voyage for him to relate, and me to hear, his story, (which, from the surprising manner of his falling amongst us, I could not but believe would contain something very remarkable) I waved any farther speech with him at that time.

We had him to the ship; and taking off his wet cloaths, put him to bed in my cabin; and I having a large provision of stores on board, and no concern in the ship, grew very fond of him, and supplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent discourses together, he had several times dropped loose hints of his past transactions, which but the more inflamed me with impatience to hear the whole of them. About this time, having just begun to double the Cape, our captain thought of watering at the first convenient place; and finding the stranger had no money to pay his passage, and that he had been from England no less than thirty-five years, despairing of his reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him that he must expect to be put on shore to shift for himself, when we put in for water. This entirely funk the stranger’s spirits, and gave me great concern; info much that I fully resolved, if the captain should really prove such a brute, to take the payment of his passage on myself.

As we came nearer to the defined watering, the captain spoke the plainer of his intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my design to him or any one else;) and one morning the stranger came into my cabin, with tears in his eyes, telling me, he verily believed the captain would be as good as his word, and set him on shore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuse to tell him immediately what I designed in his favour, but asked him if he could think of no way of satisfying the captain, or any one else who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and farther, how he expected to live when he should get to England, a man quite forgotten and penniless. Hereupon he told me he had, ever since his being on board, considering his destitute condition, entertained a thought of having his adventures written; which, as there was something so uncommon in them, he was sure the world would be glad to know; and he had flattered himself with hopes of raising somewhat by the sale of them to put him in a way of living; but as it was plain now he should never see England without my assistance, if I would answer for his passage, and write his life, he would communicate to me a faithful narrative.
narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any charge I might be at on his account. I was very well pleased with this overture; not from the prospect of gain by the copy, but from the expectation I had of being fully satisfied in what I had so long desired to know: so I told him I would make him easy in that respect. This quite transported him; he caressed me, and called me his deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the captain to tell him so. But I put a stop to that: 'For,' says I, 'though I insist upon hearing your story, the captain may yet relent of his purpose, and not leave you on shore; and if that should prove the case, I shall neither part with my money for you, nor you with your interest in your adventures to me.' Whereupon he agreed I was right, and desisted.

When we had taken in best part of our water, and the boat was going it's last turn, the captain ordered up the strange man, as they called him, and told him he must go on board the boat, which was to leave him on shore with some few provisions. I happening to hear nothing of these orders, they were so sudden, the poor man was afraid, after all, he should have been hurried to land without my knowledge; but begging very hard of the captain only for leave to speak with me before he went, I was called, (though with some reluctance; for the captain disliked me, for the liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal behaviour,) I expostulated with the cruel wretch on the inhumanity of the action he was about; telling him, if he had resolved the poor man should perish, it would have been better to have suffer'd him to do so, when he was at the last extremity, than to expose him a'fresh, by this means, to a death as certain, in a more lingering and miserable way. But the savage being resolved, and nothing moved by what I said, I paid him part of the passage down, and agreed to pay the rest at our arrival in England.

Thus having reprieved the poor man, the next thing was to enter upon my new employ of amanuensis: and having a long space of time before us, we allotted two hours every morning for the purpose of writing down his life from his own mouth; and frequently, when wind and weather kept us below, we spent some time of an afternoon in the same exercise, till we had quite compleated it. But then there were some things in it so undescribable by words, that if I had not had some knowledge also in drawing, our history had been very incompleat. Thus it must have been, especially in the description of the Glumms and Gawryes therein mentioned. In order to gain (that so I might communicate) a clear idea of these, I made several drawings of them from his discourses and accounts; and, at length, after divers trials, I made such exact delineations, that he declared they could not have been more perfect resemblances if I had drawn them from the life. Upon a survey, he confessed the very persons themselves could not have been more exact. I also drew with my pencil the figure of an aerial engagement, which, having likewise had his approbation, I have given a draught of. Then, having finished the work to our mutual satisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruse it at leisure, intending to have presented it to
INTRODUCTION.

to him at our arrival in England, to dispose of as he pleased, in such a way as might have conduced most to his profit; for I resolved, notwithstanding our agreement, and the obligations he was under to me, that the whole of that should be his own. But he, having been in a declining state some time before we reached shore, died the very night we landed; and his funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greatest right to the manuscript: which, however, I had no design to have parted with; but shewing it to some judicious friends, I have by them been prevailed with not to conceal from the world what may prove so very entertaining, and perhaps useful.
THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

GIVING AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S BIRTH AND FAMILY—THE FONDNESS OF HIS MOTHER—HIS BEING PUT TO AN ACADEMY AT SIXTEEN BY THE ADVICE OF HIS FRIEND—HIS THOUGHTS OF HIS OWN ILLITERATURE.

I WAS born at Penhale, in the county of Cornwall, on the twenty-first day of December 1685, about four months after my father, Peter Wilkins, who was a zealous protestant of the church of England, had been executed by Jeffeys, in Somerfethire, for joining in the design of raising the Duke of Monmouth to the British throne. I was named, after my father and grandfather, Peter, and was my father's only child by Alice his wife, the daughter of John Capert, a clergyman in a neighbouring village. My grandfather was a shopkeeper at Newport, who, by great frugality, and extraordinary application, had raised a fortune of about one hundred and sixty pounds a year in lands, and a considerable sum of ready-money; all which at his death devolved upon my father, as his only child; who being no less parsimonious than my grandfather, and living upon his own estate, had much improved it in value, before his marriage with my mother; but he coming to that unhappy end, my mother, after my birth, placed all her affection upon me, (her growing hopes as she called me) and used every method, in my minority, of encreasing the store for my benefit.

In this manner she went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for confinement at the apron-string, being then about fourteen years of age; and having met with so much indulgence from her, for that reason, found very little or no contradiction from any body else; so I looked on myself as a person of some consequence, and began to take all opportunities of enjoying the company of my neighbours, who hinted, frequently, that the restraint I was under, was too great a curb upon an inclination like mine of seeing the world; but my mother, still impatient of any little absence, by excessive fondness, and encouraging every inclination I seemed to have, when she could be a partaker with me, kept me within bounds of restraint, till I arrived at my sixteenth year.

About this time I got acquainted with a country gentleman, of a small paternal estate, which had been never the better for being in his hands, and had some uncanny demands upon it. He
He soon grew very fond of me, hoping, as I had reason afterwards to believe, by an union with my mother, to set himself free from his entanglements. She was then about thirty-five years old, and still continued my father’s widow, out of particular regard to me, as I have all the reason in the world to believe. She was really a beautiful woman, and of a sanguine complexion; but had always carried herself with so much reserve, and given so little encouragement to any of the other sex, that she had passed her widowhood with very few solicitations to alter her way of life. This gentleman observing my mother’s conduct, in order to ingratiate himself with her, had shewn numberless instances of regard for me; and, as he told my mother, had observed many things in my discourse, actions, and turn of mind, that prefigured wonderful expectations from me, if my genius was but properly cultivated.

This discourse, from a man of very good parts, and esteemed by every body an accomplished gentleman, by degrees wrought upon my mother, and more and more inflamed her with a desire of adding what luftre she could to my applauded abilities, and influenced her so far as to ask his advice in what manner most properly to proceed with me. My gentleman then had his desire; for he feared not the widow, could he but properly dispose of her charge; so having desired a little time to consider of a matter of such importance, he soon after told her he thought the most useful method of establishing me would be at an academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious gentleman, about thirty, or more, miles from us, in Somersetshire, where, if I could but be admitted, the matter taking in but a stated number of students at a time, he did not in the least doubt but I should fully answer the character he had given her of me; and out-shine most of my contemporaries.

My mother, over-anxious for my good, seeing to listen to this proposal, my friend (as I call him) proposed taking a journey himself to the academy, to see if any place was vacant for my reception, and learn the terms of my admission; and in three days time returned with an engaging account of the place, the master, the regularity of the scholars, of my apartment secured for my reception, and, in short, whatever else might captivate my mother’s opinion in favour of his scheme; and, indeed, though he acted principally from another motive, as was plain afterwards, I cannot help thinking he believed it to be the best way of disposing of a lad, sixteen years old, born to a pretty fortune, and who, at that age, could but just read a chapter in the Testament: for he had before beat my mother quite out of her inclination to a grammar-school in the neighbourhood, from a contempt, he said, it would bring upon me from lads much my juniors in years, by being placed in the first rudiments of learning with them.

Well, the whole concern of my mother’s little family was now employed in fitting me out for my expedition; and as my friend had been so instrumental in bringing it about, he never missed a day enquiring how preparations went on; and, during the process, by humouring me, ingratiated himself more and more with my mother, but without seeming in the least to aim at it.

In short, the hour of my departure arrived; and, though I had never been master of above sixpence at one time, unless at a fair, or so, for immediate spending, my mother, thinking to make my heart easy at our separation, (which, had it appeared otherwise, would have broke her’s, and spoiled all) gave me a double pifole in gold, and a little silver in my pocket to prevent my changing it.

Thus I, (the coach waiting for us at the door) having been preached into a good-looking of the scheme by my friend, who now insulted upon making one of our company to introduce us, mounted the carriage with more alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the fmoak of his mother’s chimney; but the thoughts I had conceived, from my friend’s discourse, of liberty in the academick way, and the weight of so much money in my pocket, as I then imagined would scarce ever be exhausted, were prevailing cordials to keep my spirits on the wing. We lay at an inn that night, near the master’s house, and the next day I was initiated; and, at parting with me, my friend
friend presented me with a guinea. When I found myself thus rich, I must say I heartily wished they were all fairly at home again, that I might have time to count my cash, and dispose of such part of it as I had already appropriated to several uses then in embryo.

The next morning left me master of my wives; for my mother came and took her last (though she little thought it) leave of me, and smoothing me with her careles and prayers for my well-doing, in the height of her adoration, put into my hand another guinea, promising to see me again quickly; and desiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good husband, which I have since taken to be a sort of prophetic speech, the bid me farewell.

I shall not trouble you with the reception I met from my master, or his scholars; or tell you how soon I made friends of all my companions, by some trifling largesses which my flock enabled me to bestow as occasion required: but I must inform you, that, after sixteen years of idleness at home, I had but little heart to my duties and pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldest lad in the house, I sometimes regretted the lots of the time past, and at other times despaired of ever making a scholar at my years; and was ashamed to stand like a great lubber, declining of bacculier, a woman, whilst my schoolfellows, and juniors by five years, were engaged in the love-stories of Ovid, or the licentious songs of Horace. I own these thoughts almost overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholy, of which I soon after, by letter, informed my mother; who (by the advice, as I suppose, of my friend, by this time her tutor) sent me word to mind my studies, and I should want for nothing.

CHAP. II.

HOW HE SPENT HIS TIME AT THE ACADEMY.—AN INTRIGUE WITH A SERVANT-MAID THERE—SHE DECLARES HERSELF WITH CHILD BY HIM.—HER EXPOSITIONS TO HIM—HE IS PUT TO IT FOR MONEY—REFUSED IT FROM HOME BY HIS FRIEND, WHO

HAD MARRIED HIS MOTHER.—IS DRAWN IN TO MARRY THE MAID—SHE LIES IN HER AUNT’S—RETURNS TO HER SERVICE—HE HAS ANOTHER CHILD BY HER.

I had now been passing my time for about three months in this melancholy way, and, you may imagine, under that disadvantage, had made but little progress in my learning; when one of my maids taking notice one day of my uneasiness, as I sat musing in my chamber according to my custom, began to rail me, that I was certainly in love, I was so sad. Indeed, I never had a thought of love before; but the good-natured girl seeming to pity me, and seriously asking me the cause, I fairly opened my heart to her; and, for fear my master should know it, gave her half-a-crown to be silent. This left engagement fixed her my devotee, and from that time we had frequent conferences in confidence together; till at length inclination, framed by opportunity, produced the date of a world of concern to me: for, about six months after my arrival at the academy, instead of proving my parts by my scholarship, I had proved my manhood—by being the destined father of an infant, which my female correspondent then assured me would soon be my own.

We, nevertheless, held on our frequent intercourse; nor was I so alarm'd at the news as I ought to have been, till about two months after; when Patty (for that was the only name I then knew her by) explained herself to me in the following terms. You know, Mr. Peter, how matters are with me; I should be very sorry, for your sake, and my own too, to reveal my shame; but, in spite of us both, nature will flew itself; and, truly, I think, some care should be taken, and some method proposed; to preferve the infant, and avoid, as far as may be, the inconveniences that may attend us; for here is now no room for delay. This speech, I own, gave me the first reflection I ever had in my life, and locked up all my faculties for a long time; nor was I able, for the variety of ideas that crowded my brain, to make a word of answer, but stood like an image of stone; till Patty, seeing my confusion, desired...
me to recollect my reason; for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that prudence and caution which the nature of the case required; and that, for her part, she would concour in every reasonable measure I should approve of: but, I must remember, she was only a servant, and had very little due to her for wages, and not a penny besides that; and that there must necessarily be a preparation made for the reception of the infant, when time should produce it. I now began to see the absolute necessity of all she said; but how to accomplish it was not in me to comprehend. My own small matter of money was gone, and had been so a long time; we therefore agreed I should write to my mother for a fresh supply. I did so; and, to my great confusion, was answered by my former friend, in the following words—

"Son Peter,

Your mother and I are much surprized you should write for money, having so amply provided for you; but as it is not many months to Christmas, when possibly we maysend for you home, you must make yourself easy till then; as a schoolboy, with all necessaries found him, can’t have much occasion for money,

Your loving father,

"J. G."

Imagine, if it is possible, my consternation at the receipt of this letter. I began to think I should be tricked out of what my father and grandfather had, with so much pains and industry, for many years been heaping up for me, and had a thousand thoughts all together, juggling each other; so could resolve on nothing. I then shewed Patty the letter, and we both consoled my hard fortune, but saw no remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be, as I could see. For my part, I was like one distracted, and no more able to assist, or counsel, what should be done, than a child in arms. At length poor Patty, who had sat thinking some time, began, with telling me she had formed a scheme which in some measure might help us; but, fearing it might be disagreeable to me, she durst not mention it, till I should assure her; whatever I thought of that, I would think no worse of her for proposing it. This preparatory introduction startled me a great deal; for it darted into my head, she waited for my concurrence to destroy the child, to which I could never have consented. But, upon my assuring her that I would not think the worse of her for whatever she should propose, but freely give her my opinion upon it, she told me, as she could see no other way before us, but what tended to our disgrace and ruin, if I would marry her, she would immediately quit her place, and retire to her aunt, who had brought her up from a child, and had enough prettily to live upon; who, she did not doubt, would entertain her as my wife; but she was assured, upon any other score, or under any other name, would prove her most inveterate enemy. When Patty had made an end, I was glad to find it no worse; and, revolving matters a little in my mind, both as to affairs at home, and the requested marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great inclination to acquaint my mother of it; but was diverted from that, by suspecting it might prove a good handle for my new father, to work with my mother some mischief against me; so determined to marry forthwith, send Patty to her aunt’s, and remain still at the academy myself, till I should see what turn things would take at home. Accordingly, the next day, good part of Patty’s wages went to tie the nunnabul knot, and to the honest parson for a bribe to ante-date the certificate; and the very soon after took up the rest, to defray her journey to her aunt’s.

Though Patty was within two months of her time, she had so managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting safe to her aunt’s, was delivered of a daughter, of which she wrote me word, and said, she hoped to see me at the end of her month. ‘How,’ thought I, ‘can I expect to see me; money I have none!’ and then I despaired of leave for a journey, if I had it; and to go without leave, would only arm J. G. against me, as I perceived plainly his interest and mine were very remote things; so I resolved to quit all thoughts of a journey, and wait till opportunity better served, for seeing my wife and child, and our good aunt, to whom
we were so much obliged. While these
and such like cogitations engrossed my
whole attention, I was most pleasingly
furprized one day, upon my return
from a musing walk, by the rivertide,
at the end of our garden, where I fre-
quently got my tasks, to find Patty
sitting in the kitchen, with my old
mistress, my master’s mother, who ma-
aged his house, he having been a wi-
dower many years. The light of her
almost overcame me, as I had bolted
into the kitchen, and was seen by my
old mistress, before I had seen Patty
was with her. The old lady perceiv-
ing me ditcompozed, enquired into the
cause, which I directly imputed to the
symptoms of an ague, that, I told
her, I had felt upon me best part of
the morning. She, a good motherly
woman, feeling my pulse, and satis-
fying herself of it’s disorder, imme-
diately ran to her closet to bring me a
cordial, which she assured me had done
wonders in the like cases; so that I had
but just time to embrace Patty, and
enquire after our aunt and daughter;
before Madam returned with the cor-
dial. Having drank it, and given
thanks, I was going to withdraw, but
she would not part with me for no-
thing less than my knowledge, that
this cordial was of her own making,
from whence she had the receipt, and
an exact catalogue of the several cures
it had done, would serve her turn;
which, taking up full three quarters of
an hour, gave room to Patty and me
to enjoy each other’s glances for that
time, to our mutual satisfaction. At
laft, the old prattlebox having made a
short pause, to recover breath, from the
narrative of the cordial— ‘Mr.
* Peter,’ says she, ‘you look as if you
did not know poor Patty; she has
not left me so long that you should
forget her; she is a good tight wench,
and I was forry to part with her;
but she is out of place, she says, and
as that dirty creature Nan is gone, I
think to take her again.’ I told her,
I well knew she was judge of a good
servant, and I did not doubt Patty was
such, if she thought so; and then I
made my exit, lighter in heart by a
pound than I came.
I shall not tire you any farther with
the amours between self and Patty;
but to let you know she quitted her
place again seven months after, upon
the same score.

CHAP. III.

MINDS HIS STUDIES—INFORMS HIS
MASTER OF HIS MOTHER’S MARRIAGE,
AND USAGE OF HIM—HEARS OF HER
DEATH—MAKES HIS MASTER HIS GUARDIAN
—Goes WITH HIM TO TAKE POSSESSION
OF HIS ESTATE—IS INFORMED ALL IS GIVEN TO
HIS FATHER-IN-LAW—MORAL REFLECTIONS
ON HIS CONDITION, AND ON HIS FATHER’S CRIMES.

I was now near nineteen years of age;
and though I had so much more
in my head than my school-learning, I
know not how it happened, but ever
since the commencement of my amour
with Patty, having somebody to dif-
burden my mind to, and to participate
in my concerns, I had been much
easier, and had kept true tally with
my book, with more than usual de-
light; and being arrived to an age to
comprehend what I heard and read, I
could, from the general idea I had of
things, form a pretty regular piece of
Latin, without being able to repeat the
very rules it was done by; so that I
had the acknowledgment of my ma-
ster for the best capacity he ever had
under his tuition: this, he not sparing
frequently to mention it before me,
was the acute spur he could have ap-
p lied to my industry; and now, having
his good will, I began to dilute six
hours of exercise, but at my conve-
niency applied myself to my studies,
as I best pleased, being always sure to
perform as much, or more, than he
ever enjoined me; till I grew exceed-
ingly in his confidence, and by reason
of my age, (though I was but small,
yet manly,) I became rather his com-
panion upon parties, than his direct
pupil.

It was upon one of these parties I
took the opportunity to declare the dis-
satisfaction I had at my mother’s se-
cond marriage. * Sir,’ says I, ‘surely
* I was of age to have known it first,
especially, considering the affection
my mother had always shewn to me,
and my never once having done the
least
least thing to disoblige her; but, 'Sir,' said I, 'something else I fear is intended, by my mother's silence to me; for I have never received above three letters from her since I came here, which is now, you know, three years, and those were within the first three months.' I then shewed him the fore-mentioned letter I received from my new father-in-law, and assured him, that gave me the first hint of this second marriage.

I found, by the attention my master gave to my relation, he seemed to fuppofe this marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the sudden, knowing what to say to it, he told me he would consider of it; and, by all means, advised me to write a very obliging letter to my new father, with my humble request, that he would pleafe to order me home the next refeas of our learning. I did fo, under my master's diftention; and not long after received an answer to the following effect—

'SON PETER,

'OUR mother has been dead a good while; and as to your request, it will be only expensive, and of little use, for a perfon who muft live by his studies can't apply to them too closely.'

This letter, if I had a little hope left, quite subdued my fortitude, and well-nigh reduced me to clay. However, with tears in my eyes, I shewed it to my master; who, good man! wishing me well; 'Peter,' says he, 'what can this mean, here is fome mystery concealed in it; here is fome ill design on foot!' Then taking the letter into his hand, 'A perfon who muft live by his studies,' says he, 'here is more meant than we can think for. Why, have not you a pretty eftate to live upon, when it comes to your hands? Peter,' says he, 'I would advise you to go to your father, and enquire how your affairs are left; but I am afraid to let you go alone, and will, when my students depart at Christmas, accompany you myself with all my heart; for, you muft know, I have advis'd on your affair already, and find you are of age to chufe yourself a guardian, who may be any relation or friend you can confide in; and may fee you have justice done you.' I immediately thanked him for the hint, and begged him to accept of the fruit, as my only friend, having very few, if any near relations: this he with great readiness complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So soon as our scholars were gone home, my master leading me a horse, we fet out together, to pollefs ourfelves of all my father's real eftate, and fuch part of the perfonal as he had been advis'd would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old house, but were not received with fuch extraordinary tokens of friendship, as would give the leaff room to fuppofe we were welcome. For my part, all I faid, or could fay, was, that I was very forry for my mother's death. My father replied, fo was he. Here we paufed, and might have faid filent till this time for me, if my master, a grave man, who had fee'n the world, and was unwilling any part of our time there, which he guesfed would be short, fhould be lof£, had not broke silence. 'Mr. G.' fays he, 'I fee the lofs of Master Wilkins's mother puts him under fome confufion; fo that you will excuse me, as his preceptor and friend, in making fome enquiry how his affairs stand, and how his effects are disposed; as I don't doubt you have taken care to schedule every thing that will be coming to him; and though he is not yet of the necessary age for taking upon himfelf the management of his eftate, he is nevertheless of capacity to underf tand the nature, and quantum of it, and to fiew his approbation of the defposition of it, as if he was a year or two older.' During this discourse, Mr. G. turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himfelf; but, however, kept silence till my master had done; when, with a fner, he replied, 'Sir, I muft own myfelf a great stranger to your difcourse; nor can I, for my life, imagine what your harangue tends to; but fure I am, I know of no eftate, real or perfonal, or any thing clie belonging to young Mr. Wilkins, to make a schedule of, as you call it; but this I know, his mother had an eftate in land, near two hundred a year, and alfo a good fum of money, when I married her; but the eftate the
the settled on me before her marriage, to dispose of after her decease as I law fit; and her money and goods are all come to my sole use, as her husband. I was just ready to drop, while Mr. G. gave this relation, and was not able to reply a word; but my matter, though sufficiently shocked at what he had heard, replied—Sir, I am informed the estate, and also the money, you mention, was Mr. Wilkins's father's at his death; and I am surprised to think any one should have a better title to them than my pupil, his only child.'—Sir,' says Mr. G. 'you are deceived; and though what you say seems plausible enough, and is in some part true, as that the late Mr. Wilkins had such estate, and some hundreds, I may say thousands, at his death; yet you seem ignorant that he made a deed, just before entering into the fatal rebellion, by which he gave my late wife both the estate, money, and everything else he had; absolutely, without any conditions whatsoever; all which, on his unhappy execution, he enjoy'd; and now of right, as I told you before, belongs to me: however, as I have no child, if Peter behaves well under your direction, I have thoughts of paying another year's board for him, and then he must shift for himself.'

'Oh!' cried I, 'for the mercy of some savage beast to devour me! Is this what I have been cocker'd up for! Why was I not placed out to some laborious craft, where I might have drudged for bread in my proper station! But, I fear, it is too late to enquire into what is past, and must submit.'

My matter, good man! was thunderstruck at what he had heard; and finding our business done there, we took our leaves; after Mr. G. had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my preceptor should keep me another year, which was all I must expect from him; and, at my departure, he gave me a crown-piece, which I then durst not refuse, for fear of offending my matter.

We made the best of our way home again to my tutor's, where I flaid but a week to consider what I should do with myself. In this time he did all he could to comfort me; telling me, if I would stay with him, and become his usher, he would compleat my learning for nothing, and allow me a salary for my trouble. But my heart was too lofty to think of becoming an usher, within so little a way from mine own estate in other hands. However, since I had not a penny of money to endeavour at recovering my right with, I told my matter I would consider of his proposal.

During my stay with him, he used all methods to make me as easy as possible; and frequently moralized with so much effect, that I was almost convinced I ought to submit, and be content. Amongst the rest of his discourse, he endeavoured to shew me, (one day, after I had been loudly condemning my cruel fortune, and saying I was born to be unhappy) that I was mistaken, if I thought, or imagined, it was chance or accident that had been against me, when I complained of fortune; 'For,' says he, 'Peter, there is nothing done below, but is at least fore-known, if not decreed, above; and our business in life is to believe so: not that I would have such belief make us careless, and think it to no purpose to strive, as some do; who being persuaded that our actions are not in our own choice, but that being presided by an irresistible decree we are forced to act this or that, fancy we must be necessarily happy or miserable hereafter; or, as others, who, for fear of falling upon that shocking principle, would even deprive the Almighty of fore-knowledge, left it should conferentially amount to a decree—"For," say they, "what is fore-known, will, and must be." But I would have you act so, as that, let either of these tenets be true, you may still be sure of making yourself easy and happy; and for that purpose let me recommend to you an uniform life of justice and piety; always choosing the good rather than the bad side of every action; for this, say they what they will to the contrary, is not above the power of a reasonable being to practise; and doing so, you may without scruple say, "If there is fore-knowledge of my actions, or they are decreed, I then am one who is fore-known or decreed to be happy." And this, without farther speculation, you will find the only means always to keep
keep you so; for all men, of all de-
nominations, fully allow this happy
effect to follow good actions. Again,
Peter, a person acting in a vicious
course, with such an opinion in his
head as above, must surely be very
miserable, as his very actions them-
selves must pronounce the decree
against him; whilst, therefore, we have
not heard the decree read, you see
we may easily give sentence whether
it be for good or evil to us, by the
tenor and course of our own actions.

You are not now to learn, Peter,
that the crimes of the father are of-
ten punished in the children, often
in the father himself, sometimes in
both, and not seldom in neither, in
this life; and though, at first, one
should think the future punishment,
annexed to bad actions, was suffi-
cient, still it is necessary some should
suffer here also for an example to
others; we being much more affected
with what the eye sees, than what
the heart only meditates upon.

Now, to bring it to our own cafe:
your father, Peter, rofe against the
lawful magistrate, to deprive him
(it matters not that he was a bad one)
of his lawful power. Your father's
policy was such, and his design so
well laid, as he thought, that upon
any ill success to himself, he had se-
cured his estate to go in the way of
all others he could wish to have it,
and sits down very well contented,
that, happen what would, he should
bite the government, in preventing
the forfeiture. But, lo! his policy
is as a wall of sand blown down with
a puff! for it is to you it ought, even
himself being umpire, to have come,
as no one would think he could
prize any before you his own child.
Now, could he look from the grave,
and know what passes here, and
see Mr. G. in possession of all he
fancied he had secured for you, what
a weak and short-lived creature
would he find himself! If it be said,
he did not know he should have a
child, then hereof appears God's po-
lcy beyond man's; for he knew it,
and has so ordered, that that child
should be disinherited; for, by the
way, Peter, take this for a maxim,
wherever the first principle of an ac-
tion is ill, no good consequence can
possibly ever be an attendant on it.

Could he, as I said before, but look
up and see you, his only child, un-
done by the very instrument he de-
signed for your security, how pun-
gent would be his anxiety! I say,
Peter, though there is something so
unaccountable, to human wisdom,
in such events of things, yet there
is something therein so reasonable
and just withal, that by a prying
eye, the Supreme Hand may very vi-
sibly be seen in them. Now, this
being plainly the cafe before us, and
herein the glory of the Almighty
exalted, ref content under it, and
let not this disappointment, befallen
you for your father's faults, be at-
tended with others sent down for
your own; but remember this, the
Hand that depresses a man, is no less
able to exalt and establish him.

C H A P. IV.

DEPARTS SECRETLY FROM HIS MA-
STER—TRAVELS TO BRISTOL—
RELIGIOUS THOUGHTS BY THE
WAY—ENTERS ON SHIPBOARD,
AND IS MADE CAPTAIN'S STEW-
ARD.

I Seemed to be very well satisfied
whil'st my master was speaking; but
though I thought he talked like an an-
gel; my former uneasinesfs feized me at
parting with him. In short, without
more consideration, I rofe in the morn-
ing early, and marched off, having first
wrote to my wife, at her aunt's, re-
lating the state of the cafe to her, with
my resolution to leave England the
first opportunity, giving her what com-
fort I could, affuring her, if I ever was
a gainer in life, she should not fail to
be a partaker, and promising also to
let her know where I settled. I walked
at a great rate, for fear my master's
kindness should prompt him to send
after me; and taking the bye-ways, I
reached by dark-night a little village,
where I resolved to halt. Upon en-
quiry, I found myself thirty-five miles
from my master's. I had eaten no-
thing all day, and was very hungry
and weary, but my crown-piece was
as yet whole; however, I fed very
 sparingly, being over-presled with the
diftresses of my affairs, and the con-
fusion of my thoughts. I slept that night to-
erably;
lerably; but the morning brought it's face of horror with it. I had enquired over night where I was, and been in-formed that I was not above sixteen miles from Bristol, for which place I then resolved. At my setting out in the morning, after I had walked about three miles, and had recollected a little my master's last discourse, I found by degrees my spirit grew calmer than it had been since I left Mr. G. at my house, (as I shall ever call it) and looking into myself for the cause, found another set of thoughts were preparing a passage into my mind, which did not carry half the dread and terror with them that their predecessors had; for I began to cast aside the diffi-culties and apprehensions I before felt in my way, and encouraging the pre-sent motions, soon became sensible of the benefit of a virtuous education; and though what I had hitherto done in the immediate service of God, I must own had been performed from force, cuftom, and habit, and without the least attention to the object of the duty; yet, as under my mother at home, and my master at the academy, I had been always used to lay my prayers, as they called it, morning and night; I began, with a fort of super-filuous reflection, to accuse myself of having omitted that duty the night be-fore, and alfo, at my setting out in the morning, and very much to blame myself for it, and, at the fame instant, even wondered at myself for that blame. What, says I, is the real ufe of this praying? and to whom or to what do we pray? I see no one to pray to; neither have I ever thought that my prayers would be answered. It is true, they are worded as if we prayed to God: but he is in Heaven, does he concern himself with us, who can do him no service? Can I think all my prayers that I have faid, from day to day, so many years, have been heard by him! No, furely; if they had, I should fcarce have fiftained this hard fate in my fortune. But hold, how have I prayed to him? Have I as ear-nestly prayed to him, as I used to pe-tition my mother for any thing when I wanted it against her inclination? No, I can't fay I have. And would my mother have granted me fuch things, if she had not thought I from my heart defired them, when
and had repeated some words of them; when, as though against and contrary to my design, I was carried away by such rapturous effusions, that, to this hour, when I reflect thereon, I cannot believe but I was moved to them by a much more than human impulse. However, this extasy did not last above a quarter of an hour; but it was considerably longer before my spirits subsided to their usual frame. When I had a little composed myself, how was I altered; how did I condemn myself for all my past disquiet! what calm thanks did I return for the ease and satisfaction of mind I then enjoyed! And coming to a small rivulet, I drank an hearty draught of water, and contentedly proceeding on my journey, I reached Bristol about four o'clock in the afternoon. Having refreshed myself, I went the same evening to the Kay, to enquire what ships were in the river, whither bound, and when they would depart. My business was with the sailors, of whom there were at that time great numbers there; but I could meet with no employ, though I gave out I would gladly enter myself before the mast: after I had done the best I could, but without success, I returned to the little house I had dined at, and went to bed very pensive. I did not forget my prayers; but I could by no means berouzed to such devotion as I felt in the morning. Next day I walked again to the Kay, asking all I met, who looked like faring men, for employment; but could hear of none, there being many waiting for births; and I feared my appearance (which was not so mean as most of that sort of gentry is) would prove no small disappointment to my preference that way. At last, being out of heart with my frequent repulses, I went to a landing-place just by, and as I asked some sailors, who were putting two gentlemen on shore, if they wanted a hand on board their ship, one of the gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the master of a vessel bound to the coast of Africa, turned back, and looking earnestly on me, 'Young man,' says he, 'do you want employment on a ship?' I immediately made him a bow, and answered, 'Yes, Sir.' Said he, 'There is no talking in this weather,' (for it then blew almost a storm) 'but step into that tavern,' pointing to the place, 'and I will be with you presently.'—I went thither, and not long after came my future matter. He asked me many questions, but the first was, whether I had been at sea. I told him no; but I did not doubt soon to learn the duty of a sailor. He then looked on my hand, and shaking his head, told me it would not do, for I had too soft a hand. I told him I was determined for the sea, and that my hand and heart should go together; and I hoped my hand would soon harden, though not my heart. He then told me, it was pity to take such a pretty young fellow before the mast; but if I understood accounts tolerably, and could write a good hand, he would make me his steward, and make it worth my while. I answered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his offer; but on his asking me where my chest was; ('For,' says he, 'if the wind had not been so strong against me, I had fallen down the river this morning,' I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other stores than I carried on my back. The captain smiled. Says he, 'Young man, I see you are a novice; why, the meanest sailor in my ship has a chest, at least, and perhaps something in it: come,' says he, 'my lad, I like your looks; be diligent and honest, I will let you have a little money to set you out, and deduct it in your pay.' He was then pulling out his purse, when I begged him, as he seemed to shew me so great a kindness, that he would order somebody to buy what necessaries he knew I should want for me, or I should be under as great a difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them, as I should have been at for want of them. He commended my prudence, and said he would buy them, and send them on board himself; so bid me trouble myself no more about them, but go to the ship, in the return of his boat, and stay there till he came; giving me a ticket to the boat's crew to take me in. When I came to the shore, the boat was gone off, and at a good distance; but I hailed them, and shewing my ticket, they put back, and took me safe to the ship; heartily glad that I was entered upon my new service.

CHAP;
CHAP. V.

His First Entertainment on Board—Sets Sail—His Sickness—Engagement with a French Privateer—is Taken and Laid in Irons—Twenty-one Prisoners Turned A drift in a Small Boat with Only Two Days Provision.

Being once on board, and in pay, I thought I was a man for myself; and set about considering how to behave; and nobody knowing; as yet, upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a passenger, as my dress did not at all bespeak me a sailor; so every one, as I fainted about, had something to say to me. By and by comes a pert young fellow up, 'Sir,' says he, 'your servant; what, I see, our captain has picked up a passenger at last.'—'Passenger,' says I, 'you are pleased to be merry, Sir; I am no passenger.'—'Why, pray,' says he, 'what may you be, then?'—'Sir,' says I, 'the captain's steward.'—'You impertinent puppy,' says he, 'what an answer you give me; you the captain's steward! No, Sir, that place, I can assure you, is in better hands!' and away he turned.—I knew not what to think of it, but was terribly afraid I should draw myself into some scrape. By and by, others asked me, some one thing, some another, and I was very cautious what answers I made them, for fear of offence; till a gruffish fellow came and sat down by me; and, after talking of the weather, and other indifferent matters, 'Pray,' says I, 'Sir, who is that gentleman that was so affronted at me soon after I came on board?'—'Oh,' says he, 'a proud insignificant fellow, the captain's steward: but don't mind him,' says he, 'he uses the captain himself as bad; they have had high words just before the captain went on shore; and had he used me, as he did him, I should have made no ceremony of tipping him over-board, a rascal!'—'Says I, 'you surprise me, for the captain sent me on board to be his steward, and agreed with me about it this afternoon.'—'Hush,' says he, 'I see how it will go; the captain, if that's the case, will discharge him when he comes on board; and, indeed, I believe he would not have kept him so long, but we have waited for a wind, and he could not provide himself.'

The captain came on board at night; and the first thing he did was, to demand the keys of Mr. Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on shore.

The next morning the captain went on shore himself; but the wind chopping about, and standing fair about noon, he returned then with my chief, and before night we were got into failing order, and before the wind, with a brisk gale.

What happened the first fourteen days of our passage I know not, having been all that time so sick and weak, I could scarcely keep life and soul together; but after grew better and better. We prosecuted our voyage, touching, for about a week, at the Madeiras in our way. The captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard duty, and I passed my time, under his favour, very pleasantly. One evening, being within sixty leagues of the Cape of Palms, calm weather, but the little wind we had against us, one of our men spied a sail, and gave the captain notice of it. He not suspecting danger, minded it little; and we made what way the wind would permit: but, night coming on, and the calm continuing, about peep of day, we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a French privateer; who, hoisting French colours, called out to us to strike. Our captain had scarce time to consider what to do, they were so near us; but as he had twenty-two men on board, and eight guns he could bring to, he called all hands on deck, and telling them the consequence of a surrender, asked them if they would stand by him. One and all swore they would fight the ship to the bottom, rather than fall into the privateer's hands. The captain immediately gave the word for a clear deck, prepared his fire-arms, and begged them to be active, and obey orders; and perceiving the privateer out-numbered, our hands by abundance, he commanded all the small arms to be brought upon deck loaded, and to run out as many of the ship's guns as he could bring
bring to one side; and to charge them all with small shot; then fland to till he gave directions.—The privateer being a light ship, and a small breeze arising, run up close to us; first firing one gun, then another, still calling out to us to strike; but we neither returned fire nor answer, till he came almost within pistol-shot of us, and seeing us a small vessel, thought to board us directly; but then our captain ordered a broadside, and immediately all hands to come on deck; himself standing there at the time of our first fire with his fufhe in his hand, and near him I fwood with another. We killed eight men and wounded several others. The privateer then fired a broadside through and through us. By this time our hands were all on deck, and the privateer putting, in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a volley from thence, that did good execution; and then all hands to the ship's guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the small arms: It is incredible how soon they had fired the great guns, and were on deck again. This last fire, being with hail, raked the privateer miserably. Then we fired the small arms, and away to the ship's guns. This we did three times successively without loss of a man; and I believe if we could have held it once more, and no affiance had come to the privateer, she had fl eered quite off; but our captain fying a fail at some distance behind the privateer, who lay to windward of us, and seeing by his glafs it was a Frenchman, was almost dismayed; the fame fight put courage into our enemies, who thereupon redoubled the attack; and, the first volley of their small arms shot our captain in the breast, upon which he dropped dead without flirring. I need not fay, that fight flocked me exceedingly. Indeed, it difconcerted the whole action; and though our mate, a man of good courage and experience, did all that a brave man could do to animate the men, they apparently dropped, and the lois of the ship became inevitable; fo we ftruck, and the Frenchman boarded us.

During the latter part of the engagement, we had two men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their wounds. We, who were alive, were all ordered on board the Frenchman; who, after rifing us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the hold. Our vessel was then ranfacked; and the other privateer, who had fuffered much the day before, in an engagement with an English twenty-gun ship of war, coming up, the prize was sent by her into port, where she herfelf was to refit.

In this condition did I, and fourteen of our crew, lie for fix weeks; till the fettors on our legs had almost eaten to the bone, and the French of the place had well-nigh suffocated us.

The Glorieux (for that was the name of the privateer who took us) saw nothing farther in five weeks worth her notice, which very much difcouraged the men; and, con ulting together, it was agreed to cruise more northward, between Sierra Leon and Cape de Verde; but, about noon, next day, they fpied a fail, coming west north-west, with a fresh gale. The captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and lie by for her. But, though the difcerned us, she kept her way, bearing only more fouthward; when the wind shifting to north-eaft, she ran for it, full before the wind, and we after her with all the fail we could cround; and though she was a very good failer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before night came pretty well up with her; but, being a large ship, and the evening hazy, we did not chufe to engage her till morning. The next morning we found she was flunk away; But we fetched her up, and, hoisting French colours, fired a shot; which the not anfwe ring, our captain run along-side of her, and fired a broadside; then slackening upon her, a hard engagement ensued; the shot thumping fo against our ship, that we prisoners, who had nothing to do in the action, expected death, one or other of us, every moment. The merchant man was fo heavy loaded, and drew fo much water, that she was very un wieldy in action; fo after a fight of two hours, when moft of her rigging and masts were cut and wounded, the fluck. Twelve men were fent on board her, and her captain and feveral officers were ordered on board us.

There were thirty-eight persons in her, including passengers; all of whom, except five, and the like number which had
had been killed in the action, were
sent chained into the hold to us, who
had lain there almost six weeks. This
prize put Monsieur into good heart,
and determined him to return home
with her. But in two days time, his
new acquisition was found to have
leaked so fast near the bottom, that be-
fore they were aware of it, the water
was risen some feet. Several hands
were employed to find out the leak;
but all ascertained it was too low to be
come at: and as the pumps, with all
the labour the prisoners, who were the
persons put to it, could use, would
not reduce it, but it still increased, they
removed what goods they could into
the privateer; and before they could
unload it, the prize sunk.

The next thing they consulted upon,
was, what to do with the prisoners,
who, by the lots of the prize, were
now grown too numerous to be trust-
ed in the privateer; fearing, too, as
they were now so far out at sea, by the
great addition of mouths, they might
soon be brought to short allowance;
it was, on both accounts, resolved to
give us the prize’s boat, which they
had saved, and turn us adrift to shift
for ourselves. There were in all forty-
three of us; but the privateer having
lost several of their own men in the
two engagements, they looked us over,
and picking out two and twenty of
us, who were the most likely fellows
for their purpose, the remaining one
and twenty were committed to the
boat, with about two days provision
and a small matter of ammunition, and
turned out.

C H A P. VI.

THE BOAT, TWO HUNDRED LEAGUES
FROM LAND, MAKES NO WAY,
BUT DRIVES MORE TO SEA BY
THE WIND—THE PEOPLE LIVE
NINE DAYS AT QUARTER AL-
LOWANCE—FOUR DIE WITH
HUNGER, THE TWELFTH DAY—
FIVE MORE THE FOURTEENTH
DAY—ON THE FIFTEENTH THEY
EAT ONE JUST DEAD—WANT OF
WATER EXCESSIVE—SPY A SAIL—
ARE TAKEN UP—WORK THEIR
PASSAGE TO THE AFRICAN
SHORE—ARE SENT ON A SECRET

EXPEDITION—ARE WAY-LAI-
TED, TAKEN SLAVES, AND SENT UP
THE COUNTRY.

W HEN we, who were in the
boat, came to reflect on our
condition, the prospect before us ap-
peared very melancholy; though, we
had at first readily enough embraced
the offer, rather than perish in so much
misery as we suffered in our loathsome
confinement. We now judged we
were above two hundred leagues from
land, in about eight degrees north la-
titude; and it blowing north-eaft, a
pretty stiff gale, we could make no
way, but rather loft, for we aimed at
some port in Africa, having neither
fail, compass, nor any other instru-
ment to direct us; so that all the ob-
servation we could make was by the
fun for running southward, or as the
wind carried us, for we had loft the
north-pole. As we had little above
two day’s provisions, we perceived a
necessity of almost starving volun-
tarily, to avoid doing it quite; seeing
it must be many days before we could
reach shore, if ever we did, having
visibly driven a great deal more south-
ward than we were; nay, unless a
sudden change happened, we were sure
of perishing, unless delivered by some
ship that Providence might send in our
way. In short, the ninth day came,
but no relief with it; and though we
had lived at quarter allowance, and
but just saved life, our food, except a
little water, was all gone, and this
caused us quite to despair. On the
twelfth day four of our company died
with hunger, in a very miserable way;
and yet the survivors had not strength
left to move them to pity their fel-
lows. In truth, we had faft still, at-
tempting nothing in several days; as
we found, that unless the wind shifted,
we only confumed the little strength
we had left to no manner of purpose.
On the fourteenth day, and in the
night, five more died, and a sixth was
near expiring; and yet we, the sur-
vivors, were fo indolent, we would
scarcely lend a hand to throw them over-
board. On the fifteenth day, in the
morning, our carpenter, weak as he
was, started up, and as the sixth man
was just dead, cut his throat, and, as
with his warm, would let out what blood
would
would flow; then, pulling off his old jacket, invited us to dinner, and cutting a large slice off the corps, devoured it with as much seeming relish as if it had been ox-beef. His examples prevailed with the rest of us, one after another, to taste and eat; and as there had been a heavy dew or rain in the night, and we had spread out every thing we had of linen and woollen to receive it, we were a little refreshed by wringing our cloaths, and sipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the sun, flowing them all close together to keep in the moisture, which served us to suck at for two days after, a little and a little at a time; for now we were in greater diffrets for water, than for meat. It has surprized me, many times since, to think how we could make so light a thing of eating our fellow-creature just dead before our eyes; but I will assure you, when we had once tasted, looked on the blessing to be so great, that we cut and eat with as little remorse as we should have had for feeding on the best meat in an English market: and most certainly, when this corpse had failed, if another had not dropped by fair means, we should have used foul, by murdering one of our number as a supply for the rest.

Water, as I said before, to moisten our mouths, was now our greatest hardship, for every man had so often drank his own, that we voided scarce any thing but blood, and that but a few drops at a time; our mouths and tongues were quite flayed with drought, and our teeth just falling from our jaws; for, though we had tried, by placing all the dead men’s jackets and shirts one over another, to drain some of the sea-water through them by small quantities, yet that would not deprive it of it’s pernicious qualities; and though it refreshed a little in going down, we were so sick, and strained ourselves so much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miserable than before. Our corps now funk so, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on board, and every man began to look with an evil eye on his fellow, to think whose turn it would be next; for the carpenter had started the question, and preached us into the necessity of it; and we had agreed, the next morning, to put it to the lot who should be the sacrifice. In this diffrets of thought, it was so ordered, by good Providence, that, on the twenty-first day, we thought we spied a sail coming from the north-west, which caused us to delay our lots till we should see whether it would discover us or not: we hung up some jackets upon our oars to be seen as far off as we could, but had so little strength left we could make no way towards it; however, it happened to direct it’s course so much to our relief, that, an hour before sun-set, it was within a league of us, but seemed to bear away more eastward, and our fear was, that they should not know our diffrets, for we were not able to make any noise from our throats that might be heard fifty yards; but the carpenter, who was still the best man amongt us, with much ado, getting one of the guns to go off, in less than half an hour he came up with us, and, seeing our deplorable condition, took us all on board, to the number of eleven. Though no methods were unfayled for our recovery, four more of us died in as many days. When the remaining seven of us came a little to ourselves, we found our deliverers were Portuguese, bound for Saint Salvador. We told the captain, we begged he would let us work our passage with him, be it where it would, to shore; and then, if we could be of no farther service to him, we did not doubt getting into Europe again: but, in the voyage, as we did him all the service in our power, we pleased him so well, that he engaged us to stay with him, to work the ship home again, he having left some hands by fever’s soon after his setting sail.

We arrived safe in port; and, in a few days, the captain, who had a secret enterprise to take in hand, hired a country coafting-veffel, and sent her seventeen leagues farther on the coast for orders from some factory or settle-ment there. I was one of the nine men who were denined to conduct her; but, not understanding Portuguese, I knew little of the business we went upon. We were to coast it all the way; but, on the tenth day, just at sun-rife, we fell in with a fleet of boats, which had way-laid us, and were taken prisoners. Being carried ashore,
ahore, we were conducted a long way up the country, where we were imprisoned, and almost starved; though I never knew the meaning of it; nor did any of us, unless the mate, who, we heard, was carried up the country, much farther, to Angola; but we never heard more of him, though we were told he would be sent back to us.

Here we remained under confinement almost three months, at the end of which time our keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us two and two together, sent a guard with us to Angola; when, crossing a large river, we were set to work in removing the rubbish and stones of a castle, or fortress, which had been lately demolished by an earthquake and lightning. Here we continued about five months, being very sparingly dieted, and locked up every night.

This place, however, I thought a paradise to our former dungeon; and, as we were not over-worked, we made our lives comfortable enough, having the air all day to refresh us from the heat, and not wanting for company; for there were, at least, three hundred of us about the whole work; and I often fancied myself at the tower of Babel, each labourer, almost, speaking in a language of his own.

Towards the latter end of our work, our keepers grew more and more remiss in their care of us. At my first coming thither, I had contracted a familiarity with one of the natives, but of a different kingdom, who was then a slave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to understand each other, he hinted to me, one day, the desire he had of seeing his own country and family; who neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, since he had left them, seven years before, to make war in this kingdom; and infinuated, that as he had taken a great liking to me, if I would endeavour to escape with him, and we succeeded, he would provide for me; for,' says he, 'you see, now our work is almost over, we are but slightly guarded; and if we stay till this job is once finished, we may be commanded to some new works, at the other end of the kingdom, for aught we know; so that our labours will only cease with our lives; and, for my part, immediate death, in the attempt of liberty, is to me preferable, able to a lingering life of slavery.'

These, and such like arguments, prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled most of the country before, in the wars of the different nations; so, having taken our resolution, the following evening, soon after our day's work, and before the time came for locking up, we withdrew from the rest, but within hearing; thinking, if we should then be miffed, and called, we would appear, and make some excuse for our absence, but if not, we should have the whole night before us.

When we were first put upon this work, we were called over singly, by name, morning and evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly observed in our motions; but not one of us having been ever absent, our actions were at length much less minded than before, and the ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; so that we concluded, if we got away unobserved the first night, we should be out of the reach of pursuers by the next; which was the sooner it was possible for them to overtake us, as we proposed to travel the first part of our journey with the utmost dispatch.

C H A P. VII.

THE AUTHOR ESCAPES WITH GLANLIPZE, A NATIVE—THEIR HARDSHIPS IN TRAVEL—PLUNDER OF A COTTAGE—HIS FEARS—ADVENTURE WITH A CROCODILE—PASSAGE OF A RIVER—ADVENTURE WITH A LIONESS AND WHELP—ARRIVE AT GLANLIPZE'S HOUSE—THE TRIAL OF GLANLIPZE'S WIFE'S CONSTANCY—THE TENDER MEETING OF HER AND HER HUSBAND— THE AUTHOR'S REFLECTIONS THEREUPON.

HAVING now set out with all possible speed, we deemed each other as joyful as we could; though it cannot be supposed we had no fears in our minds, the first part of our journey, for we had many; but as our way advanced our fears subsided; and hav-
ing, with scarce any delay, pushed forwards for the first twenty-four hours, nature then began to have two very pressing demands upon us, food and rest; but as one of them was absolutely out of our power to comply with, she contented herself with the other, till we should be better able to supply her, and gave a farther time till the next day.

The next morning found us very empty, and sharp set, though a very found night's rest had contributed it's utmost to refresh us. But what added much to our discomfort was, that though our whole subsistence must come from fruits, there was not a tree to be found at a less distance than twelve leagues, in the open rocky country we were then in; but a good draught of excellent water we met with, did us extraordinary service, and sent us with much better courage to the woods, though they were quite out of the way of our rout: there, by divers kinds of fruits, which, though my companion knew very well, I was quite a stranger to, we satisfied our hunger for the present, and took a moderate supply for another opportunity. This retarded our journey very much, for in so hard travel every pound weighed six before night.

I cannot say this journey, though bad enough, would have been so discouraging, but for the trouble of fetching our provisions so far; and then, if we meant not to lose half the next day in the same manner, we must double load ourselves, and delay our progress by that means; but we still went on, and in about eight days got quite clear of Angola.

On the eighth day, my companion, whose name was Glanlipze, told me we were very near the confines of Congo, but there was one little village still in Angola, by which we must pass, within half a league; and, if I would agree to it, he would go see what might be got here to supply ourselves with. I told him I was in an unknown world, and would follow wherever he should lead me; but asked him if he was not afraid of the people, as he was not of that country. He told me, as there had been, wars between them and his country for afflicting their neighbours of Congo, he was not concerned for any mischief he should do them, or they him; ' But,' says he, ' you have a knife in your pocket, and with that we will cut two stout clubs, and then follow me, fear no thing.'

We soon cut our clubs, and marching on, in the midst of some small shrubs, and a few scattering trees, we saw a little hovel, larger, indeed, but worse contrived, than an English hovel, to which we boldly advanced; and Glanlipze entering first, saluted an old man, who was lying on a parcel of rushes. The man attempted to run away, but Glanlipze stopped him, and we tied his hands and feet. He then set up such a hideous howl, that, had not Glanlipze threatened to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raised the whole village upon us: but we quieted him; and, rummaging to find provision, which was all we wanted, we, by good luck, spied best part of a goat hanging up behind a large mat at the farther end of the room. By this time in comes a woman with two children, very small. This was the old man's daughter, of about five and twenty. Glanlipze bound her also, and laid her by the old man; but the two children we suffered to lie untied. We then examined her; who told us the old man was her father, and that her husband, having killed a goat that morning, was gone to carry part of it to his fitter; that they had little or no corn; and finding we wanted victuals, she told us there was an earthen pot we might boil some of the goat in if we pleased.

Having now seen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our bundle; when a muleto, very gently, put his head into the door-way: him Glanlipze immediately seized; and bidding me fetch the great mat and the goat's fleece, he, in the mean time, put a long rope he found there about the beast's neck, and laying the mat upon him, we packed up the goat's fleece, and a little corn, in a calabash-fellow; and then, turning up the mat round about, kneeved it together, and over all we tied the earthen pot; Glanlipze crying out; at every thing we loaded, ' It is no hurt to plunder an enemy!' and so we marched off.

I own, I had greater apprehensions from this adventure than from any thing before; ' For,' says I, ' if the woman's
our goods; and, filling our calabashes with water, we loaded our muleto, and got forward very pleasantly that day, and several others following, and had tolerable lodgings.

About noon, one day, travelling with great glee, we met an adventure which very much daunted me, and had almost put a stop to my hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great river, whose name I have now forgot, near a league over, but full, and especially about the shores, of large trees that had fallen from the mountains, and been rolled down with the floods, and lodged there in a floating manner.

This river, Glanlipze told me, we must pass: for my part, I shrank at the sight of it, and told him, if he could get over, I would not desire to prevent his meeting with his family; but, as for my share, I had rather take my chance in the woods on this side, than plunge myself into such a stream only for the sake of drowning. "Oh!" says Glanlipze, "then you can't swim?"

"No," says I, "there's my misfortune." Well," says the kind Glanlipze, "be of good heart, I'll have you over." He then bade me go cut an armful of the tallest of the reeds that grew there near the shore, whilst he pulled up another where he then was, and bring them to him. The side of the river sloped for a good way with an easy descent, so that it was very shallow where the reeds grew, and they stood very close together upon a large compass of ground. I had no sooner entered the reeds a few yards, to cut some of the longest, but (being about knee-deep in the water and mud, and every step raising my feet very high to keep them clear of the roots, which were matted together) I thought I had trod upon a trunk of one of the trees, of which, as I said, there was such plenty thereabouts; and raising my other foot, to get that also upon the tree, as I fancied it, I found it move along with me; upon which I roared out, when Glanlipze, who was not far from me, imagining what was the matter, cried out—"Leap off, and run to shore to the right!" I knew not yet what was the cafe, but did as I was bid, and gained the shore. Looking back, I perceived the reeds shake and ruffle all the way to the shore, by degrees, after me. I was terribly fright

As soon as day broke we packed up
en, and ran to Glanlipze, who then told me the danger I had escaped, and that what I took for a tree was certainly a large alligator or crocodile.

My blood ran chill within me, at hearing the name of such a dangerous creature; but he had no sooner told me what it was, than out came the most hideous monster I had ever seen. Glanlipze ran to secure the mulettos; and then, taking the cord which had fastened him, and tying it to each end of a broken arm of a tree that lay on the shore, he marched up to the crocodile without the least dismay, and beginning near the tail, with one leg on one side, and the other on the other side, he straddled over him, still mending his pace as the beast crept forward till he came to his fore-feet; then throwing the great log before his mouth, he, by the cord in his hand, bobbed it against the creature's nose, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the mulettos; then of a sudden, jerking the wood between his jaws with all his force by the cord, he gagged the beast, with his jaws wide open up to his throat, so that he could neither make use of his teeth, nor shut his mouth; he then threw one end of the cord upon the ground, just before the creature's under-jaw, which, as he by degrees crept along over it, came out behind his fore-legs on the contrary side; and serving the other end of it in the same manner, he took up those ends and tied them over the creature's back, just within his fore-legs, which kept the gag firm in his mouth; and then calling out to me, (for I stood at a good distance) Peter, says he, bring me your knife! I trembled at going so near; for the crocodile was turning his head this way and that very uneasy, and wanting to get to the river again; but yet I carried it; keeping as much behind him as I could, still eyeing him which way he moved, and at length tossed my knife so near that Glanlipze could reach it; and he, just keeping behind the beast's fore-feet, and leaning forward, first darted the knife into one eye, and then into the other; and immediately leaping from his back, came running to me. So, Peter, says he, I have done the business. — Aye! business enough, I think, says I, and more than I would have done to have been King of Congo. — Why, Peter, says he, there is nothing but a man may compass by resolution, if he takes both ends of a thing in his view at once, and fairly deliberates on both sides what may be given and taken, from end to end. What you have seen me perform, is only from a thorough notion I have of this beast, and of myself, how far each of us hath power to act and counter-act upon the other, and duly applying the means. — But, says he, this talk will not carry us across the river— Come, here are the reeds I have pulled up, which, I believe, will be sufficient without any more, for I would not overload the muleto. — Why, says I, is the muleto to carry them? — No, they are to carry you, says he, I can never ride upon these, says I. Hush! says he, I'll not lose you, never fear. Come, cut me a good tough stick, the length of these reeds. — Well, says I, this is all conjuration; but I don't see a step towards my getting over the river yet, unless I am to ride the muleto, to upon these reeds, and guide myself with the stick. — I'm myself, Peter, says he, you have a bright guest. So, taking an armful of the reeds, and laying them on the ground, Now, Peter, says he, lay that stick upon those reeds, and tie them tight at both ends. I did so. Now, Peter, says he, lay yourself down upon them. I then laying myself on my back, lengthwise, upon the reeds, Glanlipze laughed heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my breast upon the reeds at the height of my arm-pits; and then taking a handful of the reeds he had referred by themselves, he laid them on my back, tying them to the bundle close at my shoulders, and again at the ends. Now, Peter, says he, stand up! which I did, but it was full as much as I could do. I then seeing Glanlipze laughing at the figure I cut, desired him to be serious, and not put me upon losing my life for a joke; for I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear; and, looking more soberly, ordered me to walk to the river, and so stand just within the bank till he came; then leading the muleto to me, he tied me to her, about a yard from the tail, and, taking the cord in his hand, led the muleto and me into the water. We had not gone far before
my guide began to swim; then the mulletto and I were presently chin-deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every moment; however, having gone so far; I was ashamed to cry out; when, getting out of my depth, and my reeds coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the ease imaginable: my conductor guiding us between the trees so deferiously, that not one accident happened to either of us all the way, and we arrived safe on the opposite shore.

We had now got into a very low, close, swampy country, and our goat's flesh began to be very stale through the heat, not only of the sun, but the mulletto's back; however, we pleased ourselves we should have one more meal of it before it was too bad to eat; so, having travelled about three miles from the river, we took up our lodging on a little rising, and tied our mulletto in a valley about half a furlong below us, where he made as good a meal in his way as we did in ours.

We had but just supped, and were sauntering about to find the easiest spot to sleep on, when we heard a rustling and a grumbling noise in a small thicket just on our right; which seeming to approach nearer and nearer, Gianlipze rouzed himself, and was on his legs just time enough to see a lions, and a small whelp which accompanied her, within thirty yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards guessed, for the sake of our goat's flesh, which now smelt very strong. Gianlipze whipped on the contrary side of the fire to that where the goat's flesh lay, and fell to kicking the fire about at a great rate, which being made of dry wood, caused innumerable sparks to fly about us; but the beasts still approaching in a couchant manner, and feizing the ribs of the goat, and other bones, (for we had only cut the flesh off) and grumbling and cracking them like rotten twigs, Gianlipze snatched up a fire-brand, flaming, in each hand, and made towards them; which sight so terrified the creatures, that they fled with great precipitation to the thicket again.

Gianlipze was a little uneasy at the thoughts of quitting so good a lodging as we had found, but yet held it bent to move farther; for as the lions had left the bones behind them, we must expect another visit if we stayed there, and could hope for nothing; and, above all, we might possibly lose our mulletto; so we removed our quarters two miles farther, where we slept with great tranquillity.

Reflections on the nature of mankind have often astonished me. I told you at first my thoughts concerning prayer, in my journey to Bristol, and of the benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the necessity of it; which one would think was a sufficient motive to a reasonable creature to be constant in it; and yet, it is too true that, notwithstanding the difficulties I had laboured under, and hardships I had undergone, and the danger of starving at sea or being murdered for food by my fellows, when there was as urgent a necessity of bending divine assistance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, nor of the Object of it, nor returned thanks for my being delivered, till the lions had just left me; and then I felt near the same force, urging me to return thanks for my escape, as I had impelling me to prayer before; and I think I did so with great sincerity.

I shall not trouble you with a relation of the common accidents of our journey, which lasted two months and better, nor with the different methods we used to get subsistence; but shall at once conclude you to Quanis; only mentioning that we were sometimes obliged to go about, and were once stopped by a cut that my guide and companion received by a ragged stone in his foot, which growing very bad almost deprived me of the hopes of his life; but, by rest, and constant fucking and licking it, which was the only remedy we had to apply, except green leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his direction, to supple and cool it, he soon began to be able to ride upon the mulletto, and sometimes to walk a little.

I say, we arrived at Quanis, a small place on a river of that name, where Gianlipze had a neat dwelling, and left a wife and five children when he went out to the wars. We were very near the town when the day closed; and, as it is soon dark there after sunset, you could but just see your hand at our entrance into it. We met nobody in the way, but I went directly to Gianlipze's door, by his direction, and
and struck two or three strokes hard against it with my stick. On this there came a woman to it stark-naked. I asked her, in her own language, if she knew one Glanlipze. She told me, with a deep sigh, that once she did. I asked then, where she was. She said with their ancestors, she hoped, for he was the greatest warrior in the world; but, if he was not dead, he was in slavery. Now, you must know, Glanlipze had a mind to hear how his wife took his death, or slavery, and had put me upon asking these questions before he discovered himself. I proceeded then to tell her, I brought some news of Glanlipze, and was lately come from him, and by his order. 'And does my dear Glanlipze live?' says she, flying upon my neck, and almost smothering me with carelessness, till I begged her to forbear, or she would strangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a light, when the saw I was a white man, she seemed in the utmost confusion at her own nakedness; and, immediately retiring, she threw a cloth round her waist, and came to me again. I then repeated to her, that her husband was alive and well, but wanted a ransom to redeem himself, and had sent me to see what she could any ways raise for that purpose. She told me, she and her children had lived very hardly ever since he went from her, and she had nothing to sell, or make money of, but her five children; that, as this was the time for the slave-trade, she would see what she could raise by them, and if that would not do, she would sell herself and send him the money, if he would let her know how to do it.

Glanlipze, who heard every word that passed, finding so strong a proof of his wife’s affection, could hold out no longer; but, bursting into the room, clasped her in his arms, crying, 'No, Zulika!' (for that was her name) 'I am free; there will be no occasion for your or my dear children’s slavery; and rather than have purchased my freedom at that rate, I would willingly have died a slave myself. But my own ears have heard the tender sentiments my Zulika has for me.' Then, drowned in tears of joy, they embraced each other so close, and so long, that I thought it impertinent to be seen with them, till their first transports were over. So I retired without the house, till Glanlipze called me in, which was not in less than full half an hour. I admired at the love and constancy of the persons I had just left behind me; and, 'Good Heaven,' thinks I to myself, with a sigh, 'how happy has this our escape rendered Glanlipze and his wife! what a mutual felicity do they feel! And what is the cause of all this? Is it that he has brought home great treasures from the wars? Nothing like it; he is come naked. Is it that having escaped slavery and poverty, he is returned to an opulent wife, abounding with the good things of life? No such thing. What, then, can be the cause of this excess of satisfaction, this alternate joy, that Patty and I could not have been as happy with each other? Why, it was my pride that interposed and prevented it. But what am I like to get by it, and by all this travel, and these hazards? Is this the way to make a fortune, to get an estate? No, surely, the very contrary. I could not, forsooth, labour for Patty and her children, where I was known; but am I any better for labouring here, where I am not known, where I have nobody to assist me, than I could have been where I am known, and where there would have been my friends about me, at least, if they could have afforded no great assistance? I have been deceived, then, and have travelled so many thousand miles, and undergone so many dangers, only to know, at last, I had been happier at home; and have doubled my misery, for want of consideration, that very consideration which, impartially taken, would have convinced me I ought to have made the best of my bad circumstances, and to have laid hold of every commendable method of improving them. Did I come hither to avoid daily labour or voluntary servitude at home? I have had it in abundance. Did I come hither to avoid poverty and contempt? Here I have met with them ten-fold. And now, after all, was I to return home empty and naked, as Glanlipze has done; should I meet a wife, as bare as myself, so ready to die in my embraces, and to be a slave herself, with her children, for my sake only? I fear not!'
These and the like reflections had taken possession of me, when Glanlipze called me in; where I found his wife, in her manner, preparing our supper, with all that cheerfulness which gives a true luire to innocence.

The buffle we made had by this time awakened the children; who, stark-naked, as they were born, both boys and girls, came crawling out, and black as jet, from behind a curtain at the farther end of the room, which was very long. The father, as yet, had only enquired after them; but, upon sight of them, he fell into an extasy, killing one, stroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldest was scarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for seven years makes a great chasm in young memories. The more I saw of this sport the stronger impressions Patty and my own children made upon me. My mind had been so much employed on my own distresses, that those dear ideas were almost effaced; but this moving scene introduced them afresh, and impressed them deeply on my imagination, which cherished the sweet remembrance.

CHAP. VIII,

HOW THE AUTHOR PASSED HIS TIME WITH GLANLIPZE—HIS ACQUAINTANCE WITH SOME ENGLISH PRISONERS—THEY PROJECT AN ESCAPE—HE JOINS THEM—THEY SEIZE A PORTUGUESE SHIP, AND GET OFF—MAKE A LONG RUN FROM LAND—WANT WATER—THEY ANCHOR AT A DESERT ISLAND—THE BOAT GOES ON SHORE FOR WATER—THEY LOSE THEIR ANCHOR IN A STORM—THE AUTHOR AND ONE ADAMS DROWNED THERE—THE AUTHOR'S MISERABLE CONDITION.

I passed my time with Glanlipze and his wife, who both really loved me, with sufficient bodily quiet, for about two years: my business was chiefly in company with my patron, to cultivate a spot of ground wherein we had planted grain and necessaries for the family; and once or twice a week we went a fishing, and sometimes hunted and shot venison. These were our chief employments; for as to excursions for slaves, which is a practice in many of those countries, and what the natives get-money by, since our own slavery, Glanlipze and I could not endure it.

Though I was tolerably easy in my external circumstances, yet my mind was in continual agitation. The hope of finding some European sailors, who were under confinement for contraband trade, at a Portuguese fort about two leagues from Quamis, I resolved to go and see them; and, if any of them should be English, at least to enquire after my native country. I went, and found two Dutchmen, who had been sailors in British pay several years, three Scotchmen, an Irishman, and five Englishmen, but all had been long in English merchants' service. They were taken, as they told me, by a Portuguese vessel, together with their ship, as a Dutch prize, under pretence of contraband trade. The captain was known to be a Dutchman, though he spoke good English, and was then in English pay, and his vessel English; therefore they would have it that he was a Dutch trader, and so seized his ship in the harbour, with the prisoners in it. The captain, who was on shore with several of his men, was threatened to be laid in irons, if he was taken; which obliged him and his men to abscend, and fly over land, to an English factory; for assistance to recover his ship and cargo; being afraid to appear and claim it, amongst so many enemies, without an additional force. They had been in confinement two months, and their ship confiscated and sold. In this miserable condition I left them, but returned once or twice a week, for a fortnight or three weeks, to visit them. These instances of regard, as they thought them, created some confidence in me, so that they conversed with me very freely. Amongst other discoures, they told me, one day, that one of their crew, who went with the captain, had been taken ill on the way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good Portuguese, he was not suspected to belong to them; and that he had been
to visit them, and would be there again that day. I had a mind to see him, so I stayed longer than I intended, and in about an hour's time he came. After he was seated, he asked who I was, and (privately) if I might be trusted. Being satisfied I might, for that I was a Cornish man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to see he was not overheard: 'My lads,' says he, 'be of good courage, I have hopes for you; be but men, and we shall see better days yet.' I wondered to what this preface tended; when he told us, that since his return from the captain, as he spoke good Portuguese, and had failed on board Portuguese traders several years, he mixed among that people, and particularly among the crew of the Del Cruz, the ship which had taken them; that that ship had partly unloaded, and was taking in other goods for a future voyage; that he had informed himself of their strength, and that very seldom more than three men and two boys lay on board; that he had hired himself to the captain, and was to go on board the very next day. 'Now,' says he, 'my lads, if you can break prison any night after to-morrow, and come directly to the ship,' (telling them how the lay, 'for,' says he, 'you cannot mistake, you will find two or three boats moored in the gut against the church) I will be ready to receive you, and we will get off with her, in lieu of our ship they have taken from us, for there is nothing ready to follow us.'

The prisoners listened to this discourse very attentively; but scratched their heads, fearing the difficulty of it, and severer usage if they miscarried, and made several objections; but, at last, they all swore to attempt it the night but one following. Upon which the sailor went away, to prepare for their reception on board. After he was gone, I surveyed his scheme attentively in my own mind, and found it not so difficult as I first imagined, if the prisoners could but escape cleverly. So, before I went away, I told them I approved of their purpose; and as I was their countryman, I was resolved, with their leaves, to risk my fortune with them. At this they seemed much pleased, and all embraced me. We then fixed the peremptory night, and I was to wait at the water-side, and get the boats in readiness.

The prison they were in was a Portuguese fort, which had been deferred ever since the building a much better on the other side of the river, a gun-shot lower. It was built with walls too thick for naked men to storm; the captives were securely locked up every night; and two soldiers or sentinels, kept watch in an outer-room, who were relieved from the main-guard in the body of the building.

The expected night arrived; and a little before midnight, as had been concerted, one of the prisoners cried out, he was so parched up, he was on fire, he was on fire! The sentinels were both asleep; but the first that waked, called at the door, to know what was the matter; the prisoner still crying out, 'I am on fire!' the rest begged the sentinel to bring a bowl of water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

The good-natured fellow, without waking his companion, brought the water, and having a lamp in the guard-room, opened the door; when the prisoners seizing his arms, and commanding him to silence, bound his hands behind him, and his feet together; then serving the other in the same manner, who was now just awake, and taking from them their swords and musquets, they made the belt of their way over the fort-wall; which, being built with buttresses on the inside, was easily surmounted. Being got out, they were not long in finding me, who had before this time made the boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; so in we all got, and made good speed to the ship, where we were welcomed by our companion, ready to receive us.

Under pretence of being a new-entered sailor, he had carried some Madeira wine on board, and treated the men and boys so freely, that he had thrown them into a dead sleep; which was a wise precaution. There being now, therefore, no fear of disturbance or interruption, we drew up the two boats, and set all hands at work to put the ship under way; and plied it so closely, the wind favouring us, that by eleven o'clock the next morning we were
were out of sight of land; but we set
the men and boys adrift, in one of the
boats, nigh the mouth of the river.

The first thing we did, after we had
made a long run from shore, was to
consult what course to steer. Now, as
there was a valuable loading on board,
of goods from Portugal, and others
taken in since, some gave their opinion
for failing directly to India, selling
the ship and cargo there, and returning
by some English vessel: 'but that was
rejected; for we did not doubt but no-
tice would be given of our escape along
the coast, and if we should fall into
the Portuguese's hands, we could ex-
pect no mercy; besides, we had not peo-
ple sufficient for such an enterprise.
Others, again, were for failing the
directest course for England; but I
told them, as our opinions were diffe-
rent, and no time was to be lost, my
advice was, to stretch southward, till
we might be quite out of fear of pur-
suit, and then, whatever course we
took, by keeping clear of all coasts,
we might hope to come safe off.

My proposal seemed to please the
whole crew; so, crowding all the sail
we could, we pushed southward very
briskly before the wind for several
days. We now went upon examining
our stores, and found we had flour
enough, plenty of fish, and salt pro-
visions, but were scant of water and
wood; of the first whereof there was
not half a ton, and but very little of
the latter. This made us very un-
easy; and being none of us expert in
navigation, farther than the common
working of the ship, and having no
chart on board that might direct us to
the nearest land, we were almost at
our wit's end, and came to a short al-
lowance of liquor. That we must get
water if we could, was indisputable;
but where to do it puzzled us, as we
had determined not to get in with the
African shore, on any account what-
ever.

In this perplexity, and under the
guidance of different opinions, (for we
were all captains now) we some-
times steered eastward, and sometimes
westward, for about nine days; when
we espied a little bluevifi cloud-like ap-
pearance to the south-west; this con-
tinuing, we hoped it might be land,
and therefore made to it. Upon our
nearer approach, we found it to be, as
we judged, an island; but, not know-
ing it's name, or whether it was inha-
bited, we coasted round it two days-
to satisfy ourselves as to this last par-
ticular. Seeing no living creature on
it during that time, and the shore be-
ing very broken, we came to an an-
chor about two miles from it, and sent
one of our crew in our best boat, with
some casks, to get water and cut wood.
The boat returned at night, with six
men, and the casks filled, having left
four behind, to go on with the cutting
of wood against next day. Accord-
ingly, next morning, the boat went off
again, and made two turns with water
and wood ere night, which was re-
peated for two or three days after. On
the sixth the went off for wood only,
leaving none but me and one John
Adams on board.

The boat had scarce reached the
island, this last turn, before the day
overcast, and there arose such a storm
of wind, thunder, lightning, and hail,
as I had never before seen. At last our
cable broke close to the anchor, and
away we went with the wind, full
southward by west; and not having
strength to keep the ship upon a side
wind, we were forced to set her head
right before it, and let her drive. Our
hope was, every hour, the storm would
abate; but it continued with equal
violence for many days; during all
which time, neither Adams nor I had
any rest, for one or other of us was
forced, and sometimes both, to keep
her right before the wind, or she would
certainly have overcast. When the
storm abated, as it did by degrees,
neither Adams nor I could tell where
we were, or even in what part of the
world.

I was sorry I had no better a sailor
with me, for neither Adams nor my-
fellow had ever made more than one voy-
age till now; so that we were both un-
acquainted with the latitude, and scarce
knew the use of the compass to any
purpose; and, being out of all hope
of ever reaching the island to our com-
panions, we neither knew which way
to steer, nor what to do: and, indeed,
had we known where we were, we two
only could not have been able to navi-
gate the ship to any part we desired, or
ever get to the island, unless such a
wind as we had before would of it-
self have driven us thither.
Whilst we were considering, day after day, what to do, though the sea was now very calm and smooth, the ship seemed to fail at as great a rate as before, which we attributed to the velocity she had acquired by the storm, or to currents that had set that way by the violence of the winds. Contenting ourselves with this, we expected all soon to be right again; and as we had no prospect of ever seeing our companions, we kept the best look-out we could, to see for any vessel coming that course, which might take us in; and resolved to rest all our hopes upon that.

When we had failed a good while after this manner, we knew not whether, Adams called out, 'I see land!' My heart leaped within me for joy; and we hoped, the current that seemed to carry us so fast, set in for some islands or rivers that lay before us. But still we were exceedingly puzzled at the ship's making such way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the land, which was now very visible, the more speed the ship made, though there was no wind stirring. We had but just time to think on this unexpected phenomenon, when we found that what we had taken for land was a rock of an extraordinary height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the ship increased it's motion; and all our strength could not make her answer her rudder any other way. This put us under the apprehension of being dashed to pieces immediately; and, in less than half an hour, I verily thought my fears had not been groundless. Poor Adams told me he would try when the ship struck, if he could leap upon the rock, and ran to the head for that purpose; but I was too fearful of seeing my danger, that I ran under hatches, resoluing to sink in the ship. We had no sooner parted but I felt so violent a shock, that I verily thought the ship had brought down the whole rock upon her, and been thereby dashed to pieces; so that I never more expected to see the light.

I lay under this terror for at least half an hour, waiting the ship's either filling with water or bulging every moment. But finding neither motion in her, nor any water rise, nor the least noise whatsoever, I ventured, with an aching heart; from my retreat, and stole up the hatch-way as if an enemy had been on deck, peeping first one way, then another. Here nothing presented but confusion; the rock hung over the hatchway, at about twenty feet above my head, our foremast lay by the board, the mainmast yard-arm was down, and great part of the mainmast snapped off with it, and almost every thing upon deck was displaced. This sight shocked me extremely; and calling for Adams, in whom I hoped to find some comfort, I was too soon convinced I had lost him.

CHAP. IX.

WILKINS THINKS OF DESTROYING HIMSELF—HIS SOLILOQUY—STRANGE ACCIDENT IN THE HOLD—HIS SURPRISE—CANNOT CLIMB THE ROCK—HIS METHOD TO SWEETEN HIS WATER—LIVES MANY MONTHS ON BOARD—VENTURES TO SEA IN HIS BOAT SEVERAL TIMES, AND TAKES MANY FISH—ALMOST OVERCOME BY AN EEL.

AFTER I had stood a while in the utmost confusion of thought, and my spirits began to be a little composed, I was resolved to see what damage the hull of the ship had received. Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only the was immovably fixed in a cleft of the rock, like a large arch-way, and there stuck so fast, that though upon fathoming, I could find no bottom, she never moved in the least by the working of the water.

I now began to look upon Adams as a happy man, being delivered by immediate death, from such an inextirpable scene of distress, and wished myself with him a thousand times. I had a great mind to have followed him into the other world; yet, I know not how it is, there is something so abhorrent to human nature, in self-murder, be one's condition what it will, that I was soon determined on the contrary side. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large field to expiate in upon the trial of his creatures, by bringing them into imminent dangers, ready to overwhelm them, and at the same time, as it were,
were, hanging out the flag of truce and mercy to them. These thoughts brought me to my knees, and I poured out my soul to God, in a strain of humiliation, resignation to his will, and earnest petitions for deliverance or support in this distress. Having finished, I found myself in a more composed frame; so having eaten a biscuit, and drank a can of water, and not seeing anything to be done whereby I could better my condition, I sat me down upon the deck, and fell into the following soliloquy.

"Peter," says I, "what have you to do here?"—"Alas!" replied I to myself, "I am fixed against my will in this dismal mansion, destined as rats might be, to devour the provisions only, and having cut all up, to perish with hunger for want of a supply."—"Then," says I, "of what use are you in the world, Peter?"—"Truly," answered I, "of no other use, that I can see, but to be an object of misery for Divine vengeance to work upon, and to shew what a deplorable state human nature can be reduced to; for I cannot think any one else can be so wrecked."—"And again, Peter," says I, "what have you been doing ever since you came into the world?"—"I am afraid," says I, "I can answer no better to this question than to either of the former; for if only reasonable actions are to be reckoned among my doings, I am sure I have done little worth recording; for, let me see what it all amounts to. I spent my first sixteen years in making a fool of my mother; my three next in letting her make a fool of me; and in being fool enough myself to get me a wife and two children before I was twenty. The next year was spent in finding out the misery of slavery from experience. Two years more I repined at the happiness of my benefactor, and at finding it was not my lot to enjoy the same. This year is not yet spent, and how many more are to come, and where they may be passed, and what they may produce, requires a better head than mine even to guess at; but certainly my present situation seems to promise nothing beside woe and misery."

"But hold a little," says I, "and let me clearly state my own wretchedness. I am here, it is true; but for any good I have ever done, or any advantage I have reaped from other places, I am as well here as anywhere. I have no present want of food, or unjust or cruel enemy to annoy me; so, as long as the ship continues entire, and provisions last, I shall do tolerably. Then, why should I grieve or terrify myself about what may come? What my frightened imagination suggests may perhaps never happen. Deliverance, though not to be looked for, is yet possible: and my future fate may be, as different from my present condition, as this is from the hopes with which I lately flattered myself. And why, after all, may I not die a natural death here as well as anywhere? all mankind die, and then there is an end of all. An end of all did I say? No, there is something within that gives me the lie when I say so. Let me see, "Death," my master used to say, "is not an end, but a beginning, of real life;" and may it not be so? May I not as well undergo a change from this to another state of life, when I leave this world, as be born into it I know not from whence? Who sent me into this world? Who framed me of two natures so unlike, that death cannot destroy but one of them? It must be the Almighty God. But all God's works tend to some end; and if he has given me an immortal nature, it must be his intention that I should live somewhere and somehow for ever. May not this stage of being, then, be only an introduction to a preparative for another? There is nothing in this supposition repugnant to reason. Upon the whole, if God is the Author of my being, he only has a right to dispose of it, and I may not put an end thereto without his leave. It is no less true, that my continuing therein during his pleasure, and because it is so, may turn vastly to my advantage in his good time; it may be the means of my becoming happy for ever, when it is his will that I go hence. It is no less probable, that, dismal as my present circumstances appear, I may be even, now the object of a kind Providence; God may be leading me by affliction to repentance of former
of it; but was forry the devil had got above deck. I then held several other things, one after another, in my hand, and laid them down where I laid the buckle, but nothing firred, till I took out the fellow of that from the shoes; when, letting it go, away it jumped also to the rock.

I mufed on these phenomena for some time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the devil; who muft, as I imagined, have a hand in such unaccountable things, as they then seemed to me. But at length reason got the better of these foolish apprehensions, and I began to think there might be some natural cause of them, and next to be very defirous of finding it out. In order to this, I set about making experiments, to try what would run to the rock, and what would not. I went into the captain's cabin, and opening a cupboard, of which the key was in the door, I took out a pipe, a bottle, a pocket-book, a silver spoon, a tea-cup, &c., and laid them successively near the rock; when none of them answered; but the key which I had brought out of the cupboard on my finger, dropping off while I was thus employed, no sooner it was difengaged, but away it went to it. After that I tried several other pieces of iron-ware, with the like success. Upon this, and the needle of my compass standing still to the rock, I concluded that this same rock contained great quantity of load-stone, or was itself one vast magnet, and that our lading of iron was the cause of the ship's violent course thereto, which I mentioned before.

This quite satisfied me, as to my notion of spirits, and gave me a more undisturbed night's rest than I had had before; so that now, having nothing to affright me, I paffed the time tolerably well in my solitude, as it grew by degrees familiar to me.

I had often wished it had been possible for me to climb the rock; but it was so smooth in many places, and craggy in others, and over-hanging, continuing just the same to the right and left of me as far as ever I could see, that from the impossibility of it, I discharged all thoughts of such an attempt.

I had now lived on board three months, and perceived the days grow shorter.
thither and shorter, till, having lost the fun for a little time, they were quite dark: that is, there was no absolute day-light, or indeed visible distinction between day and night; though it was never so dark but I could see well enough upon deck to go about.

What now concerned me the most was, my water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unfavourable, so that I could scarce drink it; but had no prospect of better. Now and then, indeed, it snowed a little, which I made some use of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive; and, having nothing else to do, I set two open vessels upon deck, and drawing water from the hold, I filled one of my vessels, and letting it stand a day and a night, I poured it into the other, and so shifted it every twenty-four hours: this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive taste, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheless a great help to it, by incorporating the fresh air with it: so that it became very potable; and this method I constantly used with my drinking-water, so long as I stayed on board the ship.

It had now been sharp weather for some time; and the cold still increasing, this put me upon rummaging the ship farther than ever I thought to do before; when, opening a little cabin under deck, I found a large cargo of fine French brandy, a great many bottles, and some small casks of Madeira wine, with divers cordial waters. Having tasted these, and taken out a bottle or two of brandy, and some Madeira, I locked up my door, and looked no farther that time.

The next day I enquired into my provisions; and some of my flesh having soaked out the pickle, I made fresh pickle, and closed it up again. That day also I found several cheeses, cased up in lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon: but what time of day or night it was when I eat this meal, I could not tell. I found a great many chefs well filled, and one or two of tools, which some years after stood me in a very good stead; though I did not expect they would ever be of that service when I first met with them.

In this manner I spent my time till I began to see broad day-light again, which cheered me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the dark season, that ships were coming towards me, and that I should once more have the conversation of mankind; for I had, by the small glimmering, seen many large bodies (to my thinking) move at a little distance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the light; but though I hallooed as loud as I could, and often fired my gun, I never received an answer.

When the light returned, my days increased in proportion as they had before decreased; and gathering comfort from that, I determined to launch my small boat, and to coast along the island, as I judged it, to see if it was inhabited, and by whom; I determined also to make me some lines for fishing, and carry my gun to try for other game if I found a place for landing: for though I had never, since my arrival seen a single living creature but my cat, except insects, of which there were many in the water and in the air before the dark weather, and then began to appear again, yet I could not but think there were both birds and beasts to be met with.

Upon launching my boat, I perceived fire was very leaky; so I let her fill, and continue thus a week or more, to stop her cracks; then getting down the side of my ship, I scooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for use; so putting on board my gun, lines, brandy-bottles, and a cloaths-cheef for a seat, with some little water, and provisions for a week, I once more committed myself to the sea; having taken all the observation I could, to gain my ship again, if any accident should happen; though I resolved, upon no account, to quit sight of the rock willingly.

I had not rowed very long, before I thought I saw an island to my right, about a league distant, to which I inclined to steer my course, the sea being very calm; but, upon surveying it nearer, I found it only a great cake of ice about forty yards high above the water, and a mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for ships, were only these lumps of ice. Being thus disappointed as to my island, I made what haste I could back to the rock again, and coasted part of it's circumference; but though I had
I had gone two or three leagues of it's circuit, the prospect it afforded was just the same.

I then tied my lines, by fastening several very long ones, made of the log-line, to the side of the boat, baiting them with several different baits, but took only one fish of about four pounds weight, very much resembling a haddock; part of which I dressed for my supper, after my return to the ship, and it proved very good. Towards evening I returned to my home, as I may call it.

The next day I made a voyage on the other side of the rock, though but to a small distance from the ship, with intent only to fish, but took nothing. I had then a mind to visitual my boat, or little cruizer, and prepare myself for a voyage of two or three days, which I thought I might safely undertake, as I had never seen a troubled sea since I came to the island; for, though I heard the wind often roaring over my head, yet it coming always from the land-side, it never disturbed the water near the shore. I set out the same way I went at first, designing to sail two or three days out, and as many home again; and resolved, if possible, to fathom the depth as I went. With this view I prepared a very long line, with a large shot tied in a rag at the end of it, by way of plummet; but I felt no ground till the second night. The next morning I came into thirty fathom water, then twenty, then sixteen. In both tours, I could perceive no abatement in the height or steepness of the rock.

In about fourteen fathom water I dropped my lines, and lay by for an hour or two. Feeling several jars, as I sat on my chest in the boat, I was sure I had caught somewhat; so pulling up my lines successively, I brought first a large eel, near six feet long, and almost as thick as my thigh, whose mouth, throat, and fins, were of a fine scarlet, and the belly as white as snow; he was so strong, while in the water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the boat, and then had a harder job to kill him; for though having a hatchet with me, to cut wood in case I met with any landing-place, I chopped off his head, the moment I had him on board, yet he had several times after that have liked to have broken my legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his life from him; and, had I not whipped off his tail, and also divided his body into two or three pieces, I could not have mastered him. The next I pulled up was a thick fish like a tench, but of another colour, and much bigger. I drew up several others, flat and long fish, till I was tired with the sport; and then I set out for the ship again, which I reached the third day.

During this whole time, I had but one shot, and that was as I came homewards, at a creature I saw upon a high crag of the rock, which I fired at with ball, fearing that my small shot would not reach it. The animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the rock, very near me. I picked it up, and found it to be a creature not much unlike our rabbits, but with shorter ears, a longer tail, and hoofed like a kid, though it had the perfect flock of a rabbit. I put it into my boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the ship; and plying my ears, got safe, as I said, on the third day.

I made me a fire to cook with as soon as I had got my cargo out of the boat into my ship, but was under debate which of my dainties to begin upon. I had sometimes a mind to have broiled my rabbit, as I called it, and boiled some of my fish; but being tired, I hung up my flesh till the next day, and boiled two or three forts of my fish, to try which was best. I knew not the nature of most of them, so I boiled a piece of my eel, to be sure, judging that, however I might like others, I should certainly be able to make a good meal of that. This variety being ready, I took a little of my oil out of the hold for sauce, and eat down to my meal, as satisfied as an emperor. But upon tasting my several meates, though the eel was rather richer than the smaller fishes, yet the others were all so good, I gave them the preference for that time, and laid by the rest of the eel, and of the other fish, till the next day, when I salted them for future use.

I kept now a whole week or more at home, to look farther into the contents of the ship, bottle off a cask of Madeira, which I found leaking, and to consume my new stores of fish and...
flsh; which being somewhat flake, when first salted, I thought would not keep so well as the old ones that were on board; I added also some fresh bread to my provision, and sweetened more water by the aforementioned method; and when my necessary domestick affairs were brought under, I then projected a new voyage.

**CHAP. X.**


I had for a long time wanted to see the other side of the rock, and at last resolved to try if I could not cast it quite round; for, as I reasoned with myself, I might possibly find some landing-places, and perhaps a convenient habitation on shore. But as I was very uncertain what time that might take up, I determined on having provisions, instruments of divers kinds, and necessary utensils in plenty, to guard against accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another keelboat out of the hold of the ship, and letting it into my boat, replenished it with a stock of wine, brandy, oil, bread, and the like, sufficient for a considerable voyage. I also filled a large cask with water, and took a good quantity of salt to cure what fish I should take by the way. I carried two guns, two brace of pistols, and other arms, with ammunition proportionable; also an ax or two, a saw to cut wood if I should need any, and a few other tools, which might be highly serviceable if I could land. To all these I added an old fail, to make a covering for my goods and artillery against the weather. Thus furnished and equipped, having secured my hatches on board, and every thing that might spoil by wet, I set out, with a God’s speed, on my expedition; committing myself once more to Providence and the main ocean, and proceeding the same way I went the first time.

I did not fail extraordinary salt, but frequently fished in proper places, and caught a great deal, salting and drying the belt of what I took. For three weeks time and more, I saw no entrance into the island, as I call it, nor any thing but the same unscalable rock. This uniform prospect gave me so little hopes of landing, that I was almost of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature deliberation, resolving to go forward a day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four hours, when, just as it was becoming dark, I heard a great noise, as of a fall of water; whereupon I proposed to lie by and wait for day, to see what it was; but the stream intently drawing me on, I soon found myself in an eddy; and the boat drawing forward, beyond all my power to resist it, I was quickly sucked under a low arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my boat, having barely light enough to see my danger, I had undoubtedly been crushed to pieces, or driven over-board. I could perceive the boat to fall with incredible violence, as I thought, down a precipice, and suddenly whirled round and round with me; the water roaring on all sides, and dashing against the rock with a most amazing noise.

I expected every moment my poor little vessel would be stove against the rock, and I overwhelmed with waters; and for that reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my peril, till after the commotion had in some measure ceased. At length, finding the perturbation of the water abate, and as if by degrees I came into a smoother stream, I took courage just to lift up my affrighted head; but guess, if you can, the horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of darknes, unable to perceive the smallest glimmer of light.

However, as my boat seemed to glide calmly, I roused myself, and struck a light; but if I had my terrors before, what must I have now! I was quite stupefied at the tremendous view of an immense arch over my head, to which I could see no bounds; the stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty yards broad, but in some places wider,
in some narrower. It was well for me
I happened to have a tinder-box, or, 
though I had escaped hitherto, I must 
have at last perished; for in the nar-
rower parts of the stream, where it 
rudged, there were frequently such 
craggs stood out from the rock, by 
reason of the turnings and windings, 
and such sets of the current against 
them, as, could I not have seen to 
manage my boat, which I took great 
care to keep in the middle of the stream, 
must have thrown me on them, to my 
inevitable destruction.

Happy it was for me, also, I was so 
well victualled, and that I had taken 
with me two bottles of oil, (as I sup-
paced, for I did not imagine I had any 
more) or I had certainly been lost, 
not only through hunger, for I was, 
to my gues, five weeks in the vault or 
cavern, but for want of light, which 
the oil furnished, and without which 
all other conveniences could have been 
of no avail to me. I was forced to 
keep my lamp always burning; so, 
not knowing how long my residence 
was to be in that place, or when I 
should get my discharge from it, if 
ever, I was obliged to husband my oil 
with the utmost frugality; and not-
withstanding all my caution, it grew 
low, and was just spent, in little above 
half the time I stayed there.

I had now cut a piece of my shirt, 
for a wick to my last drop of oil, 
which I twitted and lighted. I burnt 
the oil in my brass tobacco-box, which 
I had fitted pretty well to answer the 
purpose. Sitting down, I had many 
black thoughts of what must follow 
the loss of my light, which I con-
idered as near expiring, and that, I 
fear, for ever. 'I am here,' thought 
I, 'like a poor condemned criminal, 
who knows his execution is fixed for 
such a day, nay, such an hour, and 
dies over and over in imagination, 
and by the torture of his mind, till 
that hour comes; that hour, which 
he so much dreads! and yet that very 
hour which releases him from all 
farther dread!—Thus do I—My last 
wick is kindled—my last drop of 
fuel is confirming!—and I am every 
moment apprehending the shocks of 
the rock, the suffocation of the wa-
ter; and, in short, thinking over my 
dying thoughts, till the snuff of my 
lamp throws up it's last curling, ex-
piring flame, and then my quietus
will be presently signed, and I re-
feated from my tormenting anxiety!

Happy minute! Come, then; I only 
wait for thee!'

My spirits grew so low and feeble 
upon this, that I had recourse to my 
brandy-bottle to raise them; but, as 
I was just going to take a fip, I re-
eflected that would only increase thirst, 
and, therefore, it were better to take 
a little of my white Madeira: so, putting 
my dram-bottle again into the cheft, 
I held up one of Madeira, as I fancied; 
to the lamp; and seeing it was white, 
(for I had red too) I clapped it eagerly 
to my mouth, when the first gulp gave 
me a greater refreshment, and more 
cheered my heart, than all the other 
ilquors I had put together could have 
done; insomuch as I had almost leaped 
over the boat's-side for joy. 'It is 
'oil!' cried I, aloud, 'it is oil!' I 
set it down carefully, with inexpres-
ible pleasure; and examining the rest 
of the bottles I had taken for white 
Madeira, I found two more of those 
to be filled with oil. 'Now,' says I, 
'here is the counter-part of my con-
demned prisoners! For let but a par-
don come, though at the gallows, 
how soon does he forget he has been 
an unhappy villain! And I, too, have 
scare a notion now, how a man, in 
my cafe, could feel such forrow as 
I have for want of a little oil.'

After my first transport, I found 
myself grow serious; reflecting upon 
the vigilance of Providence over us 
poor creatures, and the various in-
estances wherein it interposes to fave or 
relieve us, in cases of the deepest di-
frefs, where our own foresight, wisdom, 
and power, have utterly failed, and 
when, looking all around, we could 
discover no means of deliverance. And 
I saw a train of circumstances leading 
to the incident I have just mentioned, 
which obliged me to acknowledge the 
superintendence of Heaven over even 
my affairs: and as the goodnefs of 
God had cared for me thus far, and 
manifested itself to me now, in rescu-
ing me, as it were, from being swal-
lowed up in darknefs, I had ground 
to hope he intended a compleat deliver-
ance of me out of that difmal abyss, 
and would cause me yet to praise him
in the full brightness of day.

A series of these meditations brought 
me
me (at the end of five weeks, as nearly as I could compute it by my lamp) to a prodigious lake of water, bordered with a graily down, about half a mile wide, of the finest verdure I had ever seen: this again was flanked with a wood or grove, rising like an amphitheatre, of about the same breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked rock to an immense height:

CHAPTER XI.

His Joy on His Arrival at Land—A Description of the Place—No Inhabitants—Wants Fresh Water—Resides in a Grotto—Finds Water—Views the Country—Carries His Things to the Grotto.

It is impossible to express my joy at the sight of day once more. I got on the land as soon as possible, after my dismission from the cavern, and, kneeling on the ground, returned hearty thanks to God for my deliverance, begging, at the same time, grace to improve his mercies, and that I might continue under his protection, whatever should hereafter befal me, and at last die on my native soil.

I unloaded my vessel as well as I could, and hauled her up on the shore; and, turning her upside down, made her a covering for my arms and baggage; I then sat down to contemplate the place, and eat a most delightful meal on the grass, being quite a new thing to me.

I walked over the greenward to the wood, with my gun in my hand, a brace of pseulads in my girdle, and my cutlafs hanging before me; but, when I was just entering the wood, looking behind me, and all around the plain, 'Is it possible,' says I, 'that so much art (for I did not then believe it was natural) could have been bestowed upon this place, and no inhabitant in it? Here are neither buildings, huts, castle, nor any living creature to be seen!—It cannot be,' says I, 'that this place was made for nothing!'

I then went a considerable way into the wood, and inclined to have gone much farther, it being very beautiful; but, on second thoughts, judged it best to content myself at present with only looking out a safe retreat for that night; for, however agreeable the place then seemed, darkness was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or less of horror in it.

The wood, at it's first entrance, was composed of the most charming flowering shrubs that can be imagined; each growing upon it's own item, at so convenient a distance from the other, that you might fairly pass between them any way without the least incommodity. Behind them grew numberless trees, somewhat taller, of the greatest variety of shapes, forms, and verdures, the eye ever beheld; each, also, so far aunder as was necessary for the spreading of their several branches, and the growth of their delicious fruits, without a bush, briar, or shrub, amongst them. Behind these, and still on the higher ground, grew an infinite number of very large, tall trees, much loftier than the former, but intermixed with some underwood, which grew thicker and clofer the nearer you approached the rock. I made a shift to force my way through these as far as the rock; which rose as perpendicular as a regular building, having only here and there some crags and unevennesses. There was, I observed, a space all the way between the underwood and the rock, wide enough to drive a cart in; and, indeed, I thought it had been left for that purpose.

I walked along this passage a good way, having tied a rag of the lining of my jacket at the place of my entrance, to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be ere it grew dark; but I found so much pleasure in the walk, and surveying a small natural grotto which was in the rock, that the day-light forced me unawares: whereupon I resolved to put off my return unto the boat till next morning, and to take up my lodging for that night in the cave.

I cut down a large bundle of underwood with my cutlafs, sufficient to stop up the mouth of the grotto, and laying me down to rest, slept as sound as if I had been on board my ship; for I never had one hour's rest together since I shot the gulf till this. Nature, indeed,
deed, could not have supported itself thus long under much labour; but as I had nothing to do, but only keep the middle stream, I began to be as used to guide myself in it with my eyes almost closed, and my senses retired, as a higher is to drive the cart to market in his sleep.

The next morning I awaked fleetly refreshed; and, by the sign of my rag, found the way again through the underwood to my boat. I raised that up a little; took out some bread and cheese; and, having eat pretty heartily; laid me down to drink at the lake, which looked as clear as crystal; expecting a most delicious draught; but I had forgot I brought me from the sea, and my first gulp almost poisoned me. This was a sore disappointment; for I knew my water-cask was nigh emptied; and, indeed, turning up my boat again, I drew out all that remained, and drank it, for I was much athirst.

However, I did not despair; I was now so used to God's providence, and had a sense of it's operations so rivetted in my mind, that though the vast lake of salt-water was surrounded by an impenetrable rock or barrier of stone, I rested satisfied that I should rather find even that yield me a fresh and living stream than that I should perish for want of it.

With this easy mind did I travel five or six miles on the side of the lake, and sometimes stepped into the wood, and walked a little there, till I had gone almost half the diameter of the lake, which lay in a circular or rather an oval figure. I had then thoughts of walking back, to be near my boat and lodging, for fear I should be again nighted if I went much farther; but, considering I had come past no water, and possibly I might yet find some if I went quite round the lake, I rather chose to take up with a new lodging that night, than to return; and I did not want for a supper, having brought out with me more bread and cheese than had served for dinner, the remainder of which was in the lining of my jacket. When it grew darkish, I had some thoughts of eating; but I considered, as I was then neither very hungry nor dry, if I should eat it would but occasion drought, and I had nothing to alay that with; so I contented my-
a path that brought me to my boat before night.

I then went up to my grotto, for the third night in this most delightful place; and the next morning early I launched my boat, and taking my water-cask and a small dipping-bucket with me, I rowed away for the rill, and returned highly pleased with a sufficiency of water, whereof I carried a bucket and a copper-kettle full up with me to the grotto. Indeed, it was not the least part of my satisfaction that I had this kettle with me; for though I was in hopes, in my last voyage, I should have come to some store, where I could have landed and enjoyed myself over some of my fish, and for that reason had taken it, notwithstanding things did not turn out just as I had schemed, yet my kettle proved the most useful piece of furniture I had.

Having now acquainted myself with the circumference of the lake, and settled a communication with my rill, I began to think of commencing housekeeper. In order thereto, I set about removing my goods up to the grotto. By constant application, in a few days I had gotten all thither but my two great chests and my water-cask; and how to drag or drive any of those to it, I was entirely at a loss. My water-cask was of the utmost importance to me, and I had thoughts, sometimes, of stopping it close, and rolling it to the place; but the ascent through the wood to the grotto was so steep, that, besides the fear of storing it; which would have been an irreparable loss, I judged it impossible to accomplish it by my strength; so, with a good deal of discontent, I determined to remit both that and the chests to future consideration.

**CHAP. XII.**


HAVING come to a full resolution of fixing my residence at the grotto, and making that my capital seat, it is proper to give you some description of it.

This grotto, then, was a full mile from the lake, in the rock which encompassed the wood. The entrance was scarcely two feet wide, and about nine feet high, rising, from the height of seven feet upward, to a point in the middle. The cavity was about fifteen feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to lie lengthwise in it, full six feet of it were taken up at the farther end for my lodging only, as nothing could stand on the side of my bed that would leave me room to come at it. The remaining nine feet of the cave's length were taken up, first, by my fire-place, which was the deepest side of the door-way, ranging with my bed; (which I had let close to the rock on one side) and took up near three feet in length; and my furniture and provisions, of one fort or other, filled up the rest, that I had much ado to creep between them into my bed.

In the chest which I had taken for a seat in the boat, as aforesaid, upon breaking it open by the water-side, I found a mattras, some shirts, shoes, stockings, and several other useful things; a small case of bottles with cordials in them, some instruments of surgery, plasters and salves; all which, together with a large quantity of fish that I had fished, I carried to the grotto.

My habitation being thus already overcharged, and as I could not, however, bear the thoughts of quitting it, or of having any of my goods exposed to the weather on the outside, I was naturally bent on contriving how I should encase my accommodations. As I had no prospect of enlarging the grotto itself, I could conceive no other way of effecting my desire but by the addition of an outer-room. This thought pleased me very much, so that the next day I set myself to plan out the building, and trace the foundation of it.

I told you before there was about the
the space of a cart-way between the
wood and the rock clear; but this
breadth, as I was building for life,
(so I imagined) not appearing to me
spacious enough for my new apart-
ment, I considered how I should ex-
tend it's bounds into the wood. Here-
upon I set myself to observe what trees
stood at a proper distance from my
grotto, that might serve as they stood,
with a little management of hewing and
the like, to compose a noble door-
way, posts, and supports; and I
found, that upon cutting down three
of the nearest trees, I should answer
my purpose in this respect; and that
there were several others, about twenty
feet from the grotto, and running pa-
rallel with the rock, the situation of
which was so happily adapted to my
intention, that I could make them be-
come, as I fancied, an out-fence or
wall: so I took my ax, to cut down my
nearest trees; but as I was going
to strike, a somewhat different scheme
presented to my imagination that alter-
ed my resolution.

In conformity with this new plan, I
fixed the height of my intended cel-
ing, and faved off my nearest trees to
that, floping from the sides to the mid-
le, to support cros beams for the
roof to rest on, and left the trunks
standing, by way of pillars, both for
the use and ornament of the structure.
In short, I worked hard every day up-
on my building for a month, in which
time I had cut all my timber into pro-
per lengths for my out-works and co-
vering; but was at a great fland how
to fix my side-polls, having no ipade
or mattock, and the ground almost as
hard as flint, for to be sure it had nev-
er been stirr'd since the creation. I
then thought I had the worst part of
my job to get over; however, I went on,
and having contrived, in most of my
upright side-quarters, to take the tops
of trees, and leave on the lower parts
of their cleft, where they began to
branch out and divide from the main
item, I set one of them up right against
the rock, then laid one end of my long
celing-pieces upon the cleft of it, and
laid the other end upon a tree on the
same side, whose top I had also faved
off with a proper cleft. I then went
and did the same on the other side; af-
ter this, I laid on a proper number of
cros beams and tied all very firmly to-
gether with the bark of young trees
striped off in long thongs, which an-
swered that purpose very well. Thus I
proceeded, crossing, joining, and fast-
ening all together, till the whole roof
was so strong and firm that there was
no flaring any part of it: I then
spread it over with small lop-wood, on
which I raised a ridge of dried gras
and weeds, very thick, and thatched
over the whole with the leaves of a tree
very much resembling those of a palm,
but much thicker, and not quite so
broad; the entire surface, I might say,
was as smooth as a dye, and so order-
ed, by a gentle declivity every way, as
to carry off the wet.

Having covered in my building, I
was next to finish and close the walls
of it; the skeleton of these was com-
posed of sticks, crossing one another
checker-wise and tied together; to fill
up the voids, I wove upon them the
longest and most pliable twigs of the
underwood I could find, leaving only
a door-way on one side, between two
items of a tree, which dividing in the
trunck, at about two feet from the
ground, grew from thence, for the re-
f of it's height, as if the branches were
a couple of trees a little distant from one
another, which made a sort of stile-way
to my room. When this was all done,
I tempered up some earth by the lake-
side, and mixing it to a due consistence
with mud, which I took from the lake,
applied it as a plastering in this man-
ner: I divided it into pieces, which I
rolled up of the size of a foot-ball;
these lumps I stuck close by one an-
other on the lattice, pressing them very
hard with my hands, which forced
part of them quite through the small
twigs, and then I smoothed both sides
with the back of my saw, to about the
thickness of five or six inches, so that
by this means I had a wall round my
new apartment a foot thick. This
plaster-work cost me some time, and a
great deal of labour, as I had a full
mile to go to the lake for every load of
stuff, and could carry but little at once;
it was so heavy; but there was neither
water for tempering, nor proper earth
to make it with, any nearer. At last,
however, I completed my building in
every respect but a door, and for this I
was forced to use the lid of my sea-
chest; which, indeed, I would have
chosen not to apply that way, but I
had
had nothing else that would do; and there was, however, this conveniency, that it had hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myself in my new habitation, like the absolute and sole lord of the country, for I had neither seen man nor beast since my arrival, save a few animals in the trees like our squirrels, and some water-rats about the lake; but there were several strange kinds of birds I had never before seen, both on the lake and in the woods.

That which now troubled me most was, how to get my water nearer to me than the lake, for I had no leffer vessel than the cask which held above twenty gallons, and to bring that up was a fatigue intolerable. My next contrivance, therefore, was this: I told you I had taken my chest-lid to make a door for an anti-chamber as I now began to call it; so I resolved to apply the body of the chest also to a purpose different from that it originally answer'd. In order to this, I went to the lake where the body of the chest lay, and fawed it through within about three inches of the bottom. Of the two ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two wheels; and with one of the sides I made two more. I burnt a hole through the middle of each; then preparing two axe-trees, I fastened them, after setting on the wheels, to the bottom of the chest, with the nails I had drawn out of it.

Having furnished this machine, on which I belted no small labour, I was hugely pleased with it, and only wished I had a beast, if it were but an ass, to draw it; however, that task I was satisfied to perform myself, since there was no help for it; so I made a good strong cord out of my filling-lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readiness, filling my water-cask; I bound it thereon, and so brought it to the grotto, with such ease, comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having succeeded so well in the first essay, I no sooner unloaded, but down went I again with my cart, or truckle rather, to the lake, and brought from thence on it my other chest, which I had left entire.

I had now nothing remaining near the lake but my boat, and had half a mind to try to bring that up too; but having so frequent occasion for her to get my water in, which I used in greater abundance now than I had done at first, a great part going to supply my domestick uses, as well as for drinking, I resolved against that, and sought out for a convenient dock to flow it in, as a preservative against wind and weather, which I soon after effected; for having pitched upon a swampy place, overgrown with a sort of long flags or reeds, I soon cut a trench from the lake, with a sort of spade or board that I had chopped and sharpened for that use.

Thus having flowed my boat, and looked over all my goods, and stored them, and taken a survey of my provisions, I found I must soon be in want of the last if I did not forthwith procure a supply; for though I had accustomed so well to the quelling, and had been very sparing ever since, yet, had it not been for a great quantity of fish I took and salted in my passage to the gulp, I had been to seek for food much sooner. Hereupon, I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

With this resolution I accoutred myself, as in my first walk, with my instruments and arms; but instead of travelling the lake-side, I went along the wood, and therein found great plenty of divers kinds of fruits; though I could scarce persuade myself to taste, or try the effects of them, being so much unlike our own, or any I had seen elsewhere. I observed amongst the shrubs abundance of a fruit, or whatever else you may call it, which grew like a ram's horn; sharp at the point next the twig it was fastened to, and circling round and round, one fold upon another, which gradually increased to the size of my writ in the middle, and then as gradually decreased till it terminated in a point again at the contrary extreme; all which spiral, if it were fairly extended in length, might be a yard or an ell long. I surveyed this strange vegetable very attentively; it had a rind, or crust, which I could not break with my hand, but taking my knife, and making an opening therewith in the shell, there issued out a sort of milky liquor in great quantity, to at least a pint and half, which having tasted, I found as sweet as honey, and very pleasant; however, I could not per-
flame myself any more than just to taste it. I then found on the large trees several kinds of fruits, like pears or quinces, but most of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite disagreeable; so I quitted my hopes of them.

About three miles from my grotto I met with a large space of ground full of a low plant, growing only with a single woody stalk half a foot high, and from thence issued a round head, about a foot or ten inches diameter, but quite flat, about three quarters of an inch thick, and just like a cream-cheese, standing upon it's edge: these grew so close together, that, upon the least wind stirring, their heads rattled against each other very mufically; for though the stalks were so very strong that they would not easily either bend or break, yet the fanning of the wind upon the broad heads twifting the stalks, so as to let the heads strike each other, they made a most agreeable sound.

I soon some time admiring this shrub, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two pounds, they had a tough, green rind, or covering, very smooth, and the inside full of a stringy pulp, quite white. In short, I made divers other trials of berries, roots, herbs, and what else I could find, but received little satisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad qualities. I returned back ruminating on what things I had seen, resolving to take my cart the next walk, and bring it home loaded with different kinds of them, in order to make my trials thereof at leisure: but my cart being too flat, and wanting sides, I confidered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwise bear, on that account, must tumble and roll off; so I made a fire, and turned smith; for with a great deal to do, breaking off the wards of a large key I had, and making it red-hot, I by degrees fashioned it into a kind of spindle, and therewith making holes quite round the bottom of my cart, in them I stuck up sticks, about two feet high, that I had tapered at the end to fit them.

Having thus qualified my cart for a load, I proceeded with it to the wood, and cutting a small quantity of each species of green, berry, fruit, and flower, that I could find, and packing them severally in parcels, I returned at night heavy laden, and held a council with myself what use they could most properly be applied to.

I had amongst my goods, as I said, a copper-kettle, which held about a gallon; this I set over my fire, and boiled something, by turns, of every sort in it, watching all the while, and with a stick twifting and raising up one thing and then another, to feel when they were boiled tender: but of upwards of twenty greens which I thus dressed, only one proved eatable, all the rest becoming more stringy, tough, and insipid, for the cooking. The one I have excepted, was a round, thick, woolly-leafed plant, which boiled tender, and tasted as well as spinnage, I therefore preferred some leaves of this, to know it again by; and, for distinction, called it by the name of that herb.

I then began upon my fruits of the pear and quince kind, at least eight different sorts; but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were most of them as rough and crabb'd after stewing as before, so I laid them all aside. Lastly, I boiled my ram's-horn and cream-cheese, as I called them, together. Upon tasting the latter of these, it was become too watery and insipid, I laid it aside as useless. I then cut the other, and tasted the juice, which proved so exceeding pleasant, that I took a large gulp or two of it, and tossed it into the kettle again.

Having now gone through the several kinds of my exotics, I had a mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of my greens but the spinnage. I tried several berries and nuts too; but, save a few sorts of nuts, they were all very tafteless. Then I began to review the fruits, and could find but two sorts that I had any the least hopes from. I then laid the belt by, and threw the others away. After this proces, which took me up near a whole day, and clearing my house of good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my cheese, that was grown cold, and was now so dry and hard I could not get my teeth into it; upon which I was going to skin it away out of my grotto, laying, 'Go, then worthwhile!' (for
(for I always spoke aloud my thoughts to myself) I say, I was just dispatching it, when I checked my hand, and, as I could make no impression with my teeth, had a mind to try what my knife could do. Accordingly I began at the edge of the quarter, for I had boiled but a quarter of it; but the rind was grown so hard and brittle that my knife flipping, and raking along the cut-edge of it, scratched off some powder as white as possible; I then scraped it backward and forward some time, till I found it would all scrape away in this powder, except the rind; upon which I laid it aside again for farther experiment.

During this review, my kettle and ram's-horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and seeing there was but little liquor in it, I whirled it off the fire, for fear of burning it's bottom, but took no farther notice of it till about two hours after; when, returning to the grotto, I went to wash out my kettle, but could scarce get my ram's-horn from the bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a sort of pitchy substanee, though not so black, and several gummy threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great length. I wondered at this, and thought the shell of the ram's-horn had melted, or some such thing; till venturing to put a little of the stuff on my tongue, it proved to my thinking as good treacle as I had ever tasted.

This new discovery pleased me very much. I scraped all the sweet thing up, and laid it near my grotto, in a large leaf of one of the trees, (about two feet long, and broad in proportion) to prevent it from burning out. In getting this curiosity out of my kettle, I found in it a small piece of my cheese, which I suppose had been broke off in flirring; and biting it, (for it was soft enough) I think it was the most delicious and delicate morsel I ever put into my lips. This unexpected good fortune put me on trying the butt of my pears again; so, setting on my kettle, with very little water, and putting some of my treacle into it, and two of the best pears quartered, I found, upon a little boiling, they also became an excellent dainty.

Having succeeded so well, I was quite ripe for another journey with my cart; which I accordingly undertook, taking my route over the stone-bridge, to see what the other side of the lake produced. In travelling through the trees, I met, amongst other things, with abundance of large gourds, which, climbing the trees, displayed their fruit to the height of twenty or thirty feet above the ground. I cut a great many of these, and some very large ones of different hues and forms; which of themselves making a great load, with some few new sorts of berries and greens, were the gathering of that day. But I must tell you, I was almost foiled in getting them home; for coming to my stone-bridge, it rose so steep, and was so much rugged than the grass or wood-ground, that I was at a full upon the first entrance, and terribly afraid I should either break my wheels, or pull off my axle-trees. Hereupon I was forced to unload, and carry my cargo over in my arms to the other side of the bridge; whither having then, with less fear but much caution, drawn my cart, I loaded again, and got safe home.

I was mightily pleased with the acquisitions of this journey; 'For now,' thought I, 'I shall have several convenient family utensils; so spent the next day or two in scooping my gourds and cleaning away the pulp. When I had done this, finding the rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good fire, and setting them round it at a moderate distance, to dry, I went about something else without doors; but alas! my hopes were ill-founded; for coming home to turn my gourds, and see how dry they were, I found them all warped, and turned into a variety of uncouth shapes. This put me to a stand; but, however, I recovered some pieces of them for use, as the bottom parts of most of them, after paring away the sides, would hold something, though they by no means answered my first purpose.

'Well,' thought I, 'what if I have lost my gourds, I have gained experience. I will dry them next time with the guts in, and having stiffened their rinds in their proper dimensions, then try to cleanse them.' So, next morning, (for I was very eager at it) I set out with my cart
THE AUTHOR LAYS IN A STORE AGAINST THE DARK WEATHER—HEARS VOICES—HIS THOUGHTS THEREON—PERSUADES HIMSELF IT WAS A DREAM—HEARS THEM AGAIN—DETERMINES TO SEE IF ANY ONE LODGED IN THE ROCK—IS SATISFIED THERE IS NOBODY—OBSERVATIONS ON WHAT HE SAW—FINDS A STRONG WEED LIKE WHIPCORD—MAKES A DRAG-NET—LENGTHENS IT—CATCHES A MONSTER—IT'S DESCRIPTION—MAKES OIL OF IT.

I had now well flored my grotto with all sorts of winter provisions; and seeing the weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for, the total darkness. I went little abroad, and employed myself within doors, endeavouring to fence against the approaching extremity of the cold. For this purpose, I prepared a quantity of rushes; which being very dry, I spread them smoothly on the floor of my bed-chamber a good thickness, and over them I laid my mattresses. Then I made a double sheet of the boat's awning, or sail, that I had brought to cover my goods; and having skerewed together several of the jackets and cloaths I found in the chest, of them I made a coverlid; so that I lay very commodiously, and made very long nights of it now the dark season was set in.

As I lay awake one night, or day, I know not which, I very plainly heard the sound of several human voices, and sometimes very loud; but though I could easily distinguish the articulations, I could not understand the least word that was said; nor did the voices seem at all to me like such as I had any where heard before, but much softer and more musical. This startled me, and I rose immediately, flipping on my cloaths, and taking my gun in my hand, (which I always kept charged, being my constant travelling companion) and my cutlafs. Thus equipped, I walked into my anti-chamber, where I heard the voices much plainer, till, after some little time, they by degrees died quite away. After watching here, and hearkening a good while, hearing
PETER WILKINS.

49

hearing nothing, I walked back into the grotto, and laid me down again on my bed. I was inclined to open the door of my anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; besides, I considered that if I did, I could discover nothing at any distance, by reason of the thick and gloomy wood that inclosed me.

I had a thousand different surmises about the meaning of this odd incident; and could not conceive how any human creatures should be in my kingdom (as I called it) but myself, and I never yet fix them, or any trace of their habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had surrounded the whole lake, yet I had not traced the out-bounds of the wood next the rock, where there might be innumerable grottos like mine; nay, perhaps, some as spacious as that I had failed through to the lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful spot might be very well peopled. But, says I again, if there be any such beings as I am fancying here, surely they don’t fluk in their dens, like savage beasts, by day-light, and only patrol for prey by night! if so, I shall probably become a malicious monster for them ere long, if they meet with me.’ This kept me still more within doors than before, and I hardly ever flitted out but for water or firing. At length, hearing no more voices, nor seeing any one, I began to be more composed in my mind, and at last grew persuaded it was all a mere delusion, and only a fancy of mine without any real foundation; and sometimes, though I was sure I was fully awake when I heard them, I persuaded myself I had rov’d in my sleet, upon a dream of voices, and recollected with myself the various stories I had heard, when a boy, of walking in one’s sleep, and the surprising effects of it; so the whole notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoyed my tranquillity above a week, before my fears were roused afresh, hearing the same sound of voices twice the same night, but not many minutes at a time. What gave me most pain was, that they were at such a distance, as I judged by the languor of the sound, that if I had opened my door, I could not have seen the utterers through the trees, and I was resoluted not to venture out; but then I determined, if they should come again any thing near my grotto, to open the door, see who they were, and stand upon my defence, whatever came of it: ’For,’ says I, ’my entrance is so narrow and high, that more than one cannot come at a time; and I can with safety dispatch twenty of them before they can secure me, if they should be savages; but if they prove sensible human creatures, it will be a great benefit to me to join myself to their society.’ Thus had I formed my scheme, but I heard no more of them for a great while; so that at length, beginning to grow ashamed of my fears, I became tranquil again.

The day now returning, and with it my labours, I applied to my usual callings; but my mind ran strangely upon viewing the rock quite round, that is, the whole circuit of my dominions; ’For,’ thinks I, ’there may possibly be an outlet through the rock into some other country, from whence the perfons I heard may come.’ As soon therefore as the days grew towards the longest, I prepared for my progress, Having lived so well at home since my settlement, I did not care to trust only to what I could pick up in the woods for my subsistence during this journey, which would not only take up time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; so I resolved to carry a supply with me, proportionate to the length of my perambulation. Hereupon considering, that though my walk round the lake was finished in two days, yet as I now intended to go round by the rock, the way would be much longer; an’d perhaps more troublesome than that was; remembering also my journey with Gnanipze in Africa, and how much I complained of the fruits we carried for our subsistence; these circumstances, I say, laying together, I resolved to load the cart with a variety of food, bread and fruits especially, and draw that with me.

Thus provided, I fellied forth with great cheerfulness, and proceeded in the main esily; though in some places I was forced to make way with my hatchet, the ground was so over-run with underwood. I very narrowly viewed the rock as I went, bottom and sides, all the way, but could see nothing like a passage through it, or in-
PETER WILKINS.

PETER had much but was fibre never here's for drew could that fow, ground desired 'if whipcord, exti-icated about * filled for brought quantity needed cut went large little cut as told could ilrong be and found could fo lengths perceived had firft and Indeed, 

As I saw but few things that I could not find a use for, fo this I perceived would serve all the common purposes of packthread; a thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a lead of it home with me. Indeed, the difficulty of getting a quantity in the condition I desired it, puzzled me a little; 'For,' says I, 'if I cut up a good deal of it with my hatchet, as I first designed, I shall only have small lengths good for little, and to get it in pieces of any considerable length, so as to be of service, will require much time and labour.' But reflecting how much I needed it, and of what benefit it would be, I resolved to make a trial of what I could do; so, without more hesitation, I went to work, and cutting a fibre close to it's root, I extricated that thread from all it's windings, just as one does an entangled whipcord. When I had thus disengaged a sufficient length, I cut that off; and repeating the like operation, in about three hours time, but with no little toil, I made up my load of different lengths just to my liking. Having finished this task, I filled the gourd, brought for that purpose, with water; and having first viewed the whole remaining part of the rock, I returned over the stone-bridge home again.

This journey, though it took me up several days, and was attended with some fatigue, had yet given me great satisfaction; for now I was persuaded I could not have one rival, or enemy, to fear in my whole dominions. And from the impossibility, as I supposed, of there being any, or of the ingress of any, unless by the fame passage I entered at, and by which I was well assured they could never return, I grew contented, and blamed myself for the folly of my imaginary voices, as I called them then, and took it for a distemper of the fancy only.

The next day I looked over my load of mat-weed, having given it that name, and separated the different lengths from each other. I then found I had several pieces between forty and fifty feet long, of which I resolved to get a good number more, to make me a drag-net, that I might try for some fish in the lake. A day or two after, therefore, I brought home another load of it. Then I picked out a smooth level spot upon
In the had long run had would fveep flipped taking perfection, But caught joined wrapped set had would and vtrf crossed and tied did I Iftand my and playing lobster, so then had launched proper Some but had at begin my pone the afimder; fttuck. the of thought, outermost line, rags, then lines along I the to to the net, represented that quite very and pegs by the body, thereby, an green-fward, I getting many creature, and fixing the boat, had cut for that pur- pose, I launched my boat, with the other end in it, taking a sweep the length of my net round to my stick again, and getting on shore, hauled up my net by both ends together. I found now I had mended my instru- ment, and taken a proper way of ap- plying it; for by this means, in five hauls, I caught about sixteen fish of three or four different sorts; and one shell-fish, almost like a lobster, but without great claws, and with a very small short tail; which made me think, as the body was twice as long as a lobster’s in proportion, that it did not swim backwards, like that creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having lobster-like legs, but much shorter and stronger) and that the legs all standing so forward, it’s tail was, by it’s mo- tion, to keep the hinder part of the body from dragging upon the ground, as I observed it did when the creature walked on land, it then frequently flacking it’s short tail.

These fish made me rich in provi- sions. Some of them I eat fiish, and the remainder I salted down. But of all the kinds, my lobster was the most delicious food, and made me almost three meals.

Thus finding there were filth to be had, though my present tackle seemed suitable enough to my family, yet could I not rest, till I had improved my fiillery by enlarging my net; for as it was, even with my late addition, I must either sweep little or no compafs of ground, or it would have no bag behind me. Upon this I set to work, and shortly doubled the dimensions of it. I had then a mind to try it at the mouth of my rill; so taking it with me the next time I crossed the lake for water, and fastening it to my pole, close by the right-side of the rill, I swept a long compafs round to the left, and closing the ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow cut of the rill. But by the time I had gathered up two thirds of the net, I felt a resistance that quite amazed me. In short, I was not able to stand against the force I felt. Whereupon, sitting down in the rill, and clapping my feet to the two sides of it, I exerted all my strength, till finally I became conqueror, and brought up so shocking a monster, that I was just rising to run for my life on the sight of it. But recollecting that the creature was hampered, and could not make so much resistance on the land as in the water, I ventured to drag the net up as far from the rill as my strength and breath would permit me; and then running to the boat for my gun, I re- turned to the net, to examine my prize. Indeed, I had not instantly resolution enough
enough to survey it; and when at length I assumed courage enough to do so, I could not perfectly distinguish the parts, they were so discomposed; but taking hold of one end of the net, I endeavoured to disentangle the thing, and then drawing the net away, a most furprizing sight presented itself: the creature reared upright, about three-feet high, covered all over with long black flaggy hair, like a bear, which hung down from his head and neck quite along his back and sides. He had two fins, very broad and large, which, as he stood erect, looked like arms, and those he waved and whirled about with incredible velocity; and though I wondered at first at it, I found afterwards it was the motion of these fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceased their motion he fell flat on his belly. He had two very large feet, which he stood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them, which made me in the left half to dispatch him; and after he had stood upon his feet about four minutes, clapping his fins to his sides, he fell upon his belly.

When I found he could not attack me, I was moving closer to him; but, upon sight of my stirring, up he rose again, and whirled his fins about as before, so long as he stood. And now I viewed him round, and found he had no tail at all, and that his hinder fins, or feet, very much resembled a large frog’s, but were at least ten inches broad, and eighteen long, from heel to toe; and his legs were so short that when he stood upright his breech bore upon the ground. His belly, which he kept towards me, was of an ash-colour, and very broad, as was also his breast. His eyes were small and blue, with a large black sight in the middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long snout like a boar, and vault teeth. Thus having surveyed him near half an hour living, I made him rise up once more and shot him in the breast. He fell, and giving a loud howl, or groan, expired.

I had then time to see what else I had caught; and turning over the net, found a few of the same fish I had taken before, and some others of a flattish make, and one little lump of fish uniformed; which last, by all I could make of it, seemed to be either a spawn or young one of that I had shot.

The great creature was so heavy, I was afraid I must have cut him in pieces to get him to the boat; but with much ado, having flowed the reef, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my water-cask, and rowed homewards. Being got to land, I was obliged to bring down my cart, to carry my great beast-fish, as I termed him, up to the grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a notion of first tasting, and then, if I liked his flesh, of salting him down, and drying him; so, having flayed him, and taken out the guts and inrails, I broiled a piece of him; but it made such a blaze, that most of the fat ran into the fire, and the flesh proved so dry and rank, that I could no ways endure it.

I then began to be sorry I had taken so much pains for no profit, and had endangered my net into the bargain, (for that had got a crack or two in the scuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large but worthless acquisition.

However, as I was now prone to weighing all things, before I threw it away, I resolved to consider a little, whereupon I changed my mind. Says I, ‘Here is a good warm skin, which, when dry, will make me a rare cushion. Again, I have for a long while had no light beside that of the day; but now, as this beast’s fat makes such a blaze in the fire, and if Ies in so great a quantity from such a small piece as I broiled, why may not I boil a good tallow or oil out of it? and if I can, I have not made so bad a hand of my time as I thought for.’

In short, I went immediately to work upon this subject, (for I never let a project cool after I had once started it) and boiled as much of the flesh as the kettle would hold, and letting it stand to cool, I found it turned out a very good oil for burning; though, I confess, I thought it would rather have made tallow. This success quickened my industri; and I repeated the operation till I got about ten quarts of this stuff, which very well rewarded my labour. After I had extracted as much oil as I could from the beast-fish, the creature having strongly
strongly impressed my imagination, I conceived a new fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling groan at his death, I endeavoured to persuade myself, and at last verily believed, that the voices I had so often heard, in the dark weather, proceeded from numbers of these creatures, diverting themselves in the lake, or sporting together on the shore; and this thought, in its turn, contributed to ease my apprehensions in that respect.

CHAP. XIV.

THE AUTHOR PASSES THE SUMMER PLEASANTLY—HEARS THE VOICES IN THE WINTER—VENTURES OUT—SEES A STRANGE SIGHT ON THE LAKE—HIS UNEASINESS AT IT—HIS DREAM—SOLILOQUY—HEARS THE VOICES AGAIN, AND PERCEIVES A GREAT SHOCK ON HIS BUILDING—TAKES UP A BEAUTIFUL WOMAN—HE THINKS HER DEAD, BUT RECOVERS HER—A DESCRIPTION OF HER—SHE STAYS WITH HIM.

I passed the summer (though I had never yet seen the sun's body) very much to my satisfaction; partly in the work I have been describing, (for I had taken two more of the beaf-fish, and had a great quantity of oil from them;) partly, in building me a chimney in my anti-chamber of mud and earth burnt on my own hearth into a sort of brick; in making a window at one end of the above-mentioned chamber, to let in what little light would come through the trees, when I did not choose to open my door; in moulding an earthen lamp for my oil; and, finally, in providing and laying in stores, fresh and salt, (for I had now cured and dried many more fish) against winter. Thence, I say, were my summer employments at home, intermingled with many agreeable excursions. But now the winter coming on, and the days growing very short, or indeed there being no day, properly speaking, but a kind of twilight, I kept mostly in my habitation, though not so much as I had done the winter before, when I had no light within doors, and slept, or at least lay still, great part of my time; for now my lamp was never put out. I also turned two of my beaf-fish skins into a rug to cover my bed, and the third into a cushion, which I always sat upon, and a very soft and warm cushion it made. All this together rendered my life very easy, yes, even comfortable.

An indifferent person would now be apt to ask, 'What would this man do? fire more than he had?' To this I answer, that I was contented while my condition was such as I have been describing: but a little while after the darkness or twilight came on, I frequently heard the voices again; sometimes a few only at a time, as it seemed, and then again in great numbers. This threw me into new fears, and I became as uneasy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite melancholy; though, otherwife, I never received the least injury from any thing. I foolishly attempted several times, by looking out of my window, to discover what these odd sounds proceeded from, though I knew it was too dark to see any thing there.

I was now fully convinced, by a more deliberate attention to them, that they could not be uttered by the beaf-fish, as I had afore conjectured, but only by beings capable of articulate speech; but then, what or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

At length, one night or day, I cannot say which, hearing the voices very distinctly, and praying veryearnestly to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took courage, and arming myself with guns, pistols, and cutlafs, I went out of my grotto, and crept down the wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the compass they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the found, till I came to the verge of the wood, where I could see the lake very well by the dazzle of the water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a fleet of boats, covering a large compass; and not far from the bridge. I was shocked hereat beyond expression. I could not conceive where they came from, or whether they would go; but supposed there must be some other passage to the lake than I had found in my voyage through the cavern, and that for certain they came that way, and
and from some place, of which as yet I had no manner of knowledge.

Whilst I was entertaining myself with this speculation, I heard the people in the boats laughing and talking very merrily, though I was too distant to distinguish the words. I discerned soon after all the boats (as I still supposed them) draw up, and push for the bridge; presently after, though I was sure no boat entered the arch, I saw a multitude of people on the opposite shore all marching towards the bridge; and what was the strangest of all, there was not the least sign of a boat now left upon the whole lake. I then was in a great consternation than before; but was still much more so, when I saw the whole posse of people, that as I have just said were marching towards the bridge, coming over it to my side of the lake. At this my heart failed, and I was just going to run to my grotto for shelter; but taking one look more, I plainly discovered that the people, leaping one after another from the top of the bridge, as if into the water, and then rising again, flew in a long train over the lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my sight, laughing, halloving, and sporting together; so that looking back again to the bridge, and on the lake, I could neither see person nor boat, nor anything else; nor hear the least noise or stir afterwards for that time.

I returned to my grotto brim-full of this amazing adventure, bemoaning my misfortune in being at a place where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. 'For,' says I, 'if I am in a land of spirits, as now I have little room to doubt, there is no guarding against them. I am never safe, even in my grotto; for that can be no security against such beings as can fall on the water in no boats, and fly in the air on no wings, as the cafe now appears to me, who can be here and there, and wherever they please. What a miserable state I say, am I fallen to? I should have been glad to have had human converse, and to have found inhabitants in this place; but there being none, as I supposed hitherto, I contented myself with thinking I was at least safe from all those evils mankind in society are obnoxious to: 'But now, what may be the consequence of the next hour I know not; nay, I am not able to say, but whilst I speak, and shew my discontent, they may at a distance conceive my thoughts, and be hatching revenge against me for my dislike of them.'

The pressure of my spirits inclining me to repose, I laid me down, but could get no rest; nor could all my most fierce thoughts, even of the Almighty Providence, give me relief under my present anxiety: and all this was only from my state of uncertainty concerning the reality of what I had heard and seen; and from the earnestness with which I coveted a satisfactory knowledge of those beings who had just taken their flight from me.

I really believe, the fiercest wild beast, or the most savage of mankind that had met me, and put me upon my defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that, I had no seeing possibility of ever being rid of my apprehensions: so, finding I could not sleep, I got up again; but as I could not fly from myself, all the art I could use with myself, was but in vain to obtain me any quiet.

In the height of my distress I had recourse to prayer, with no small benefit; begging, that if it pleased not the Almighty Power to remove the object of my fears, at least to resolve my doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. Hereupon, as I always did on such occasions, found myself much more placid and easy, and began to hope the best, till I had almost persuaded myself that I was out of danger; and then laying myself down, I rested very sweetly, till I was awakened by the impulse of the following dream.

Methought I was in Cornwall, at my wife's aunt's; and enquiring after her, and my children, the old gentlewoman informed me, both my wife and children had been dead some time, and that my wife, before her departure, deigned her (that is, her aunt) immediately upon my arrival to tell me, she was only gone to the lake, where I should be sure to see her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the lake to find her. In my passage she stopped me, crying, 'Whither so fast, Peter? I am
Published as the Act directs by harshia, 1st Aug, 1783.
I am your wife, your Patty.' Me-thought I did not know her, she was so altered; but observing her voice, and looking more wielly at her, she appeared to me as the most beautiful creature I ever beheld. I then went to seize her in my arms; but the hurry of my spirits awakened me.

When I got up, I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my door. My dream ran strangely in my head, and I had now nothing but Patty in my mind. 'Oh!' cries I, 'how happy could I be with her, though I had only her in this solitude. Oh! that this was but a reality, and not a dream.' And, indeed, though it was but a dream, I could scarce refrain from running to the lake to meet my Patty. But then I checked my folly, and reafoned myself into some degree of temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, 'What, no body to converse with! Nobody to affift, comfort, or counsel me! This is a melancholy situation indeed.'

Thus I ran on lamenting till I was almost weary; when, on a sudden, I again heard the voices, 'Hark!' says I, 'here they come again. Well, I am now resolute to face them; come life, come death! It is not to be alone I thus dread; but to have company about me, and not know who or what, is death to me worse than I can suffer from them, be they who or what they will.'

During my soliloquy the voices increased, and then by degrees diminished as usual; but I had scarce got my gun in my hand, to pursue my resolution of flewing myself to those who uttered them, when I felt such a thump upon the roof of my anti-chamber, as shook the whole fabric; and let me all over into a tremor; I then heard a sort of throb, and a stuff near the door of my apartment; all which together seemed very terrible. But I, having before determined to see what and who it was, resolutely opened my door and leaped out. I saw nobody; all was quite silent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own fears a moving. I went then softly to the corner of the building, and there looking down by the glimmer of my lamp, which stood in the window, I saw something in human shape lying at my feet. I gave the word, 'Who's there?' Still no one answered. My heart was ready to force its way through my side. I was for a while fixed to the earth like a statue. At length, recovering, I stepped in, fetched my lamp, and returning, saw the very beautiful face my Patty appeared under in my dream; and not considering that it was only a dream, I verily thought I had my Patty before me, but the seeming to be stone dead. Upon viewing her other parts, (for I had never removed my eyes from her face) I found she had a sort of brown chaplet, like lace, round her head, under and about which her hair was tucked up and twisted; and she seemed to me to be clothed in a thin hair-coloured silk garment, which, upon trying to raise her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was life in the body it contained. I then took her into my arms, and treading a step backwards with her, I put out my lamp; however, having her in my arms, I conveyed her through the door-way in the dark into my grotto; here I laid her upon my bed, and then ran out for my lamp.

'This,' thinks I, 'is an amazing adventure. How could Patty come here, and dress'd in silk and whale-bone too? sure that is not the reigning fashion in England now? But my dream laid she was dead. Why, truly,' says I, 'so she seems to be. But be it so, she is warm. Whether this is the place for perfons to inhabit after death or not, I can't tell, (for I see there are people here, though I don't know them;) but be it as it will, she feels as flesh and blood; and if I can but bring her to stir and act again as my wife, what matters it to me what she is! it will be a great blessing and comfort to me; for she never would have come to this very spot, but for my good.'

Top full of these thoughts, I re-entered my grotto, shut my door, and lighted my lamp; when going to my Patty, (as I delighted to fancy her) I thought I saw her eyes stir a little. I then let the lamp farther off, for fear of offending them if she should look up; and warming the last glass I had preserved of my Madeira, I carried it to her, but she never stirred. I now supposed the fall had absolutely killed her,
her, and was prodigiously grieved; when, laying my hand on her breast, I perceived the fountain of life had some motion. This gave me infinite pleasure; so, not despairing, I dipped my finger in the wine, and moistened her lips with it two or three times, and imagined they opened a little. Upon this I thought to, and taking a teaspoon, I gently poured a few drops of the wine by that means into her mouth. Finding she swallowed it, I poured in another spoonful, and another, till I brought her to herself so well as to be able to sit up. All this I did by a glimmering light, which the lamp afforded from a distant part of the room, where I had placed it, as I have said, out of her sight.

I then spoke to her, and asked divers questions, as if she had really been Patty, and understood me; in return of which, she uttered a language I had no idea of, though in the most musical tones, and with the sweetest accent I ever heard. It grieved me I could not understand her. However, thinking she might like to be on her feet, I went to lift her off the bed; when she felt to my touch in the oddest manner imaginable: for, while in one respect, it was as though she had been cased up in whalebone, it was at the same time as soft and warm as if she had been naked.

I then took her in my arms and carried her into my anti-chamber again; where I would fain have entered into conversation, but found she and I could make nothing of it together, unless we could understand one another's speech. It is very strange my dream should have presaged to me of Patty, and of the alteration of her countenance, that I could by no means persuade myself the person I had with me was not she; though, upon a deliberate comparison, Patty, as pleasing as she always was to my taste, would no more come up to this fair creature, than a coarse ale-wife would to Venus herself.

You may imagine we feared heartily at each other, and I doubted not but she wondered as much as I by what means we came so near each other. I offered her every thing in my grotto, which I thought might please her; some of which she gratefully received, as appeared by her looks and behaviour.

But she avoided my lamp, and always placed her back toward it. I observing that, and ascribing it to her modesty in my company, let her have her will, and took care to set it in such a position myself as seemed agreeable to her, though it deprived me of a prospect I very much admired.

After we had sat a good while, now and then, I may say, chattering to one another, she got up, and took a turn or two about the room. When I saw her in that attitude, her grace and motion perfectly charmed me, and her shape was incomparable; but the strangeness of her dress put me to my trumps, to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we supped together, and I set the best of every thing I had before her, nor could either of us forbear speaking in our own tongue, though we were sensible neither of us understood the other. After supper I gave her some of my cordials, for which she showed great tokens of thankfulness, and often, in her way, by signs and gestures, which were very far from being insignificant, expressed her gratitude for my kindnised. When supper had been some time over, I shewed her my bed, and made signs for her to go to it; but she seemed very shy of that, till I shewed her where I meant to lie myself, by pointing to myself, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my bed. When, at length, I had made this matter intelligible to her, she lay down very complacently; and after I had taken care of my fire, and set the things I had been uing for supper in their places, I laid myself down too; for I could have no suspicious thoughts, or fear of danger, from a form so excellent.

I treated her for some time with all the respect imaginable, and never suffered her to do the least part of my work. It was very inconvenient to both of us only to know each other's meaning by signs; but I could not be otherwise than pleased to see, that she endeavoured all in her power to learn to talk like me. Indeed, I was not behind-hand with her in that respect, striving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, she never shewed the least disquiet at her confinement; for I kept my door shut at first, through fear of losing her, thinking she
she would have taken an opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think she could fly.

C H A P. XV.

WILKINS AFRAID OF LOSING HIS NEW MISTRESS—THEY LIVE TOGETHER ALL WINTER—A REMARK ON THAT—THEY BEGIN TO KNOW EACH OTHER'S LANGUAGE—A LONG DISCOURSE BETWEEN THEM AT CROSS-PURPOSES—SHE FLIES—THEY ENGAGE TO BE MAN AND WIFE.

AFTER my new love had been with me a fortnight, finding my water run low, I was greatly troubled at the thought of quitting her any time, to go for more; and having hinted it to her, with seeming uneasiness, she could not for a while fathom my meaning; but when she saw me much confused, she came at length, by the many signs I made, to imagine it was my concern for her which made me so; whereupon she expressively enough signified I might be easy, for she did not fear anything happening to her in my absence. On this, as well as I could declare my meaning, I entreated her not to go away before my return. As soon as she understood what I signified to her, by actions, she sat down, with her arms across, leaning her head against the wall, to assure me she would not stir. However, as I had before nailed a cord to the outside of the door, I tied that for caution's sake to the tree, for fear of the worst; but I believe she had not the least design of removing.

I took my boat, net, and water-calk, as usual; devious of bringing her home a fresh fish dinner, and succeeded so well as to catch enough for several good meals, and to spare. What remained I salted, and found she liked that better than the fresh, after a few days salting; though she did not so well approve of that I had formerly pickled and dried. As my salt grew very low, though I had been as sparing of it as possible, I now resolved to try making some; and the next summer I effected it.

Thus we spent the remainder of the winter together, till the days began to be light enough for me to walk abroad a little in the middle of them; for I was now under no apprehensions of her leaving me, as she had before this time had so many opportunities of doing so, but never once attempted it.

I must here make one reflection upon our conduct; which you will almost think incredible, viz. that we two, of different sexes, not wanting our peculiar desires, fully inflamed with love to each other, and no outward obstacle to prevent our wishes, should have been together, under the same roof, alone for five months, converse together from morning to night, (for by this time she very well understood English, and I her language) and yet I should never have eloped her in my arms, or have shown any farther amorous desires to her, than what the deference I all along paid her could give her room to survive. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know that the covering she wore was not the work of art, but the work of nature; for I really took it for silk; though it must be premised that I had never seen it by any other light than of my lamp. Indeed, the modesty of her carriage, and sweetness of her behaviour to me; had struck me with a dread of offending her, that though nothing upon earth could be more capable of exciting passion than her charms, I could have died rather than have attempted to salute her only without actual invitation.

When the weather cleared up a little, by the lengthening of day-light, I took courage one afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the lake; but she sweetly excused herself from it, whilst there was such a frightful glare of light, as she said; but, looking out at the door, told me, if I would not go out of the wood, she would accompany me: so we agreed to take a turn only there. I first went myself over the style of the door, and thinking it rather too high for her, I took her in my arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this manner, I knew not what to make of her clathing, it fat so true and close; but seeing her by a steadier and truer light in the grove, though a heavy, gloomy one, than my lamp had afforded, I begged she would let me know of what silk or other composition her garment was made. She smiled, and asked me if mine was not the same under my jacket.
No, lady,' says I, 'I have nothing but my skin under my cloaths.'—

'Why, what do you mean?' replies she, somewhat tartly; 'but, indeed, I was afraid something was the matter, by that nasty covering you wear, that you might not be seen. Are not you a glummm?—' 'Yes,' says I, 'fair creature.' (Here, though you may conceive she spoke part English, her own tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each other, I shall give you our discourse, word for word, in plain English.) 'Then,' says she, 'I am afraid you must have been a very bad man, and have been a craifhee, which I should be very sorry to hear.' I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my faults had not at most exceeded other men's; but I had suffered abundance of hardships in my time; and that at last Providence having settled me in this spot, from whence I had no prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of its mercies to bring to my knowledge and company the most exquisite piece of all his works, in her, which I should acknowledge as long as I lived. She was surprized at this discourse; and asked me, (if I did not mean to impose upon her, and was indeed an ingra-thee glumm) why I should tell her I had no prospect of departing from hence.

'Have not you,' says she, 'the fame prospect that I or any other person has of departing? Sir,' added she, 'you don't do well, and really I fear you are slit, or you would not wear this nasty cumbersome coat,' taking hold of my jacket-sleeve, 'if you were not afraid of shewing the signs of a bad life upon your natural clothing.'

I could not for my heart imagine what way there was to get out of my dominions. 'But certainly,' thought I, there must be some or other, or she would not be so peremptory.' And as to my jacket, and shewing myself in my natural clothing; I protest she made me blush; and, but for shame, I would have flipp'd to my skin to have satisfied her. 'But, Madam,' says I, pray pardon me, for you are really mistaken; I have examined every nook and corner of this new world, in which we now are, and can find no possible outlet; nay, even by the fame way I came in, I am sure it is impossible to get out again.'—

'Why,' says she, 'what outlets have you searched for, or what way can you expect out, but the way you came in? And why is that impossible to return by again? If you are not slit, is not the air open to you? Will not the sky admit you to parade in it, as well as other people? I tell you, Sir, I fear you have been slit for your crimes; and though you have been so good to me, that I can't help loving of you heartily for it, yet if I thought you had been slit, I would not, nay could not, stay a moment longer with you; no, though it should break my heart to leave you.'

I found myself now in a strange quandary, longing to know what she meant by being slit; and had a hundred strange notions in my head whether I was slit or not; for though I knew what the word naturally signified well enough, yet in what manner, or by what figure of speech she applied it to me, I had no idea of. But seeing her look a little angrily upon me, 'Pray, Madam,' says I, 'don't be offended, if I take the liberty to ask you what you mean by the word craifhee, so often repeated by you; for I am an utter stranger to what you mean by it.'—'Sir,' says she, 'pray answer me first, how you came here?'—'Madam,' replied I, 'if you will please to take a walk to the verge of the wood, I will shew you the very passage,'—'Sir,' says she, 'I perfectly know the range of the rocks all round, and by the least description, without going to see them, can tell from which you descended.'—'In truth,' said I, 'most charming lady, I descended from no rock at all; nor would I for a thousand worlds attempt what could not be accomplished but by my destruction.'—'Sir,' says she, in some anger, 'it is false, and you impose upon me.'—'I declare to you,' says I, 'Madam, what I tell you is strictly true; I never was near the summit of any of the surrounding rocks, or any thing like it; but as you are not far from the verge of the wood, he is good as to step a little farther, and I will shew you my entrance in hither.'—'Well,'
Well,' says she, 'now this odious dazzle of light is extinguished, I don't care if I do go with you.'

When we came far enough to see the bridge, 'There, Madam,' says I, 'there is my entrance, where the sea pours into this lake from under cavern.'—'It is not possible,' says she; this is another untruth: and as I see you would deceive me, and are not to be believed, farewell; I must be gone.—But, hold,' says she, 'let me ask you one thing more; that is, by what means did you come through that cavern? You could not have used to have come over the rock!—Bloats me, Madam!' says I, 'do you think I and my boat could fly?—'Come over the rock,' did you say?—'No, Madam; I failed from the great sea, the main ocean, in my boat, through that cavern into this very lake here.'—'What do you mean by your boat?' says she. 'You seem to make two things of your boat you say you failed with and yourself.'—'I do so,' replied I; 'for, Madam, I take myself to be good flesh and blood, but my boat is made of wood and other materials.'—'Is it so?' says she. 'And, pray, where is this boat that is made of wood and other materials? under your jacket?'—'Lord, Madam!' says I, 'you put me in fear that you were angry; but now I hope you only joke with me.'

'What, put a boat under my jacket!'—'No, Madam; my boat is in the lake.'—'What, more untruths!' says she. 'No, Madam,' I replied; 'if you would be satisfied of what I say, (every word of which is as true as that my boat now is in the lake) pray walk with me thither, and make your own eyes judge what sincerity I speak with.' To this she agreed, it growing dusky; but assured me, if I did not give her good satisfaction, I should see her no more.

We arrived at the lake; and going to my wet-dock, 'Now, Madam,' says I, 'pray satisfy yourself whether I speak true or no.' She looked at my boat, but could not yet frame a proper notion of it. Says I, 'Madam, in this very boat I failed from the main ocean through that cavern into this lake; and shall at last think myself the happiest of all men if you continue with me, love me, and credit me; and I promise you I'll never deceive you, but think my life happily spent in your service.' I found she was hardly content yet to believe what I told her of my boat to be true; till I stepped into it, and pushing from the shore, took my oars in my hand, and sailed along the lake by her, as she walked on the shore. At last, she seemed so well reconciled to me and my boat, that she desired I would take her in. I immediately did so, and we sailed a good way; and as we returned to my dock, I described to her how I procured the water we drank, and brought it to shore in that vessel.

Well,' says she, 'I have failed, as you call it, many a mile in my lifetime, but never in such a thing as this. I own it will serve very well where one has a great many things to carry from place to place; but to be labouring thus at an oar, when one intends pleasure in failing, is, in my mind, a most ridiculous piece of slavery.'—'Why, pray, Madam, how would you have me fail? for getting into the boat only, will not carry us this way or that without using some force.'—'But,' says she, 'pray where did you get this boat, as you call it?'—'O Madam!' says I, that is too long; and fatal a story to begin upon now: this boat was made many thousand miles from hence, among a people coal-black, a quite different sort from us; and, when I first had it, I little thought of seeing this country: but I will make a faithful relation of all to you when we come home.' Indeed, I began to with heartily we were there, for it grew into the night; and having strolled so far without my gun, I was afraid of what I had before seen and heard, and hinted our return; but I found my motion was disagreeable to her, and so I dropped it.

I now perceived, and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agreeable it seemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good-humour again, by seeing and failing in my boat, I was not willing to prevent it's increas. I told her, if she pleased, we would land, and when I had docked my boat, I would accompany her where and as long as she liked. As we talked and walked by the lake, she made a little run before me, and sprang into
into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon she merrily called on me to follow her. 'The light was then so dim, as prevented my having more than a confused sight of her when she jumped in; and looking earnestly after her, I could discern nothing more than a small boat on the water, which skimmed along at so great a rate that I almost lost sight of it presently; but, running along the shore for fear of losing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely lost sight of the boat upon the lake.'—

'This,' says she, accosting me with a smile, 'is my way of failing, which

I perceive, by the fright you were in, you are altogether unacquainted with; and, as you tell me, you came from so many thousand miles off, it is possible you may be differently from me: but, surely, we are the part of the creation which has had most care bestowed upon it; and I suspect, from all your discourse, to which I have been very attentive, it is possible you may no more be able to fly than to fail as I do.'—

'No, charming creature,' says I, 'that I cannot, I'll assure you.' She then stepping to the edge of the lake, for the advantage of a descent before her, sprung up into the air, and away she went, farther than my eyes could follow her.

I was quite astonished. 'So,' says I, 'then all is over! all a delusion which I have so long been in! a mere phantom! Better had it been for me never to have seen her, than thus to lose her again! But what could I expect had she failed? For it is plain she is no human composition.—But,' says I, 'the felt like flesh, too, when I lifted her out at the door!' I had but very little time for reflection; for, in about ten minutes after she had left me in this mixture of grief and amazement, she alighted just by me on her feet.

Her return, as she plainly saw, filled me with a transport not to be concealed; and which, as the afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed, I was some moments in such an agitation of mind from these unparalleled incidents, that I was like one thunderstruck; but coming presently to myself, and clasping her in my arms with as much love and passion as I was capable of expressing, and for the first time with any desire, 'Are you really turned again, kind angel,' said I, 'to bless a wretch who can only be happy in adoring you! Can it be, that you, who have so many advantages over me, should quit all the pleasures that nature has formed you for, and all your friends and relations, to take an asylum in my arms!' But I here make you a tender of all 'I am able to bestow—my love and constancy.'—

'Come, come,' says she, 'no more raptures; I find you are a worthier man than I thought I had reason to take you for, and I beg your pardon for my distrust, whilst I was ignorant of your imperfections; but now I verily believe all you have said is true; and I promise you, as you have seemed so much to delight in me, I will never quit you till death or other than fatal accident shall part us. But we will now, if you chuse, go home; for I know you have been some time uneasy in this gloom, though agreeable to me: for, giving my eyes the pleasure of looking eagerly on you, it conceals my blushes from your sight.'

In this manner, exchanging mutual endearments and soft speeches, hand in hand, we arrived at the grotto; where we that night confounded our nuptials, without farther ceremony than mutual solemn engagements to each other; which are, in truth, the essence of marriage, and all that was there and then in our power.

CHAP. XVI.

THE AUTHOR'S DISAPPOINTMENT AT FIRST GOING TO BED WITH HIS NEW WIFE—SOME STRANGE CIRCUMSTANCES RELATING THERE-TO—SHE RESOLVES SEVERAL QUESTIONS HE ASKS HER, AND CLEARS UP HIS FEARS AS TO THE VOICES—A DESCRIPTION OF SWANGEANS.

EVERY calm is succeeded by a storm, as is every storm by its calm; for, after supper, in order to give my bride the opportunity of undressing alone, which I thought might be most agreeable the first night, I withdrew into the anti-chamber till I thought she was laid; and then, having first disposed
disposed of my lamp, I moved softly towards her; and stepped into bed too; when, on my nearer approach to her, I imagined she had her cloaths on. This struck a thorough damp over me; and asking her the reason of it, not being able to touch the least bit of her flesh but her face and hands, she burst out a laughing; and, running her hand along my naked side, soon perceived the difference she before had made such doubt of between herself and me. Upon which she fairly told me, that neither she, nor any person she had ever seen before, had any other covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with, but with their lives. This shocked me terribly; not from the horror of the thing itself, or any dislike I had to this covering, (for it was quite smooth, warm, and softer than velvet or the finest skin imaginable) but from an apprehension of her being so wholly incased in it; that, though I had so fine a companion, and now a wife, yet I should have no conjugal benefit from her, either to my own gratification, or the increase of our species.

In the height of my impatience, I made divers efforts for unfolding this covering, but unsuccessfully. 'Surely,' says I, 'there must be some way of coming at my wishes! or why should she seem so shy of me at first, and now we are under engagements to each other, meet me half way with such a yielding compliance?' I could, if I had had time to spare, have gone on, starting objections and answering them, in my own breath, a great while longer, (for I now knew not what to make of it;) but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling, as tenderly as possible, upon her bosom, for the folds or plait of her garment, the lying perfectly still, and perceiving divers flat broad ledges, like whale-bone, seemingly under her covering, which closely infolded her body, I thought it might be all laced on together somewhat like stays, and felt behind for the lacing. At length, perceiving me so puzzled, and beyond conception vexed at my disappointment, of a sudden, left I should grow outrageous, (which I was almost come to) she threw down all those seeming ribs flat to her side so imperceptibly to me, that I knew nothing of the matter, though I lay close to her; till putting forth my hand again to her bosom, the softest skin, and most delightful body, free from all impediment, presented itself to my wishes, and gave up itself to my embraces.

I slept very soundly till morning, and so did she; but at waking I was very solicitous to find out what sort of being I had had in my arms, and what qualities her garment was endowed, or how contrived, that notwithstanding all my fruitless attempts to uncover her, she herself could so instantly dispose of it, undiscovered by me. 'Well,' thought I, 'she is my wife, I will be satisfied in every thing; for, surely, she will not now refuse to gratify my curiosity.'

We rose with the light; but, surely, no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up first, lighted the fire, and pre pared breakfast of some fish-soup, thickened with my cream-cheese; and then calling her, I kept my eye towards the bed to see how she dressed herself; but throwing aside the cloaths, she stepped out ready dressed, and came to me. When I had kissed her, and wished her a good day, we sat down to breakfast; which being soon over, I told her. I hoped every minute of our lives would prove as happy as those we so lately passed together; which she seemed to wish with equal amour. I then told her, now she was my wife, I thought proper to know her name, which I had never before asked, for fear of giving uneasiness; for, as I added, I did not doubt she had observed in my behaviour, ever since I first saw her, a peculiar tenderness for her, and a sedulous concern not to offend, which had obliged me hitherto to steve several questions I had to ask her whenever they would be agree able to her. She then bid me begin; for, as she was now my wife, whilst I was speaking, it became her to be all attention, and to give me the utmost satisfaction she could in all I should require, as she herself should have to great an interest in every thing for the future which would oblige me.

Compliments (if, in compliance with old custom, I may call them so, for they were by us delivered from the heart)
heart) being a little over on both sides, I first desired to know what name she went by before I found her: 'For,' says I, 'having only hitherto called you Madam, and my Lady, besides the future expression of my love to you in the word dear, I would know your original name, that so I might join it with that tender epithet.'—

That you shall,' says she, 'and also my family at another opportunity; but as my name will not take up long time to repeat at present, it is Youwarkee. —And, pray,' says she, 'now gratify me with the knowledge of yours.' —'My dear Youwarkee,' says I, 'my name was Peter Wilkins when I heard it last; but that is so long ago, I had almost forgot it. —And now,' says I, 'there is another thing you can give me a pleasure in. —You need, then, only mention it, my dear Peter,' says she. —That is,' says I, 'only to tell me, if you did not, by some accident, fall from the top of the rock over my habitation, upon the roof of it, when I first took you in here; and whether you are of the country upon the rocks?' She, softly smiling, answered, 'My dear Peter, you run your questions too thick; as to my country, which is not on the rocks, as you suppose, but at a vast distance from hence, I shall leave that, till I may hereafter, at more leisure, speak of my family, as I promised you before; but as to how I came into this grotto, I knew not at first, but soon perceived your humanity had brought me in, to take care of me, after a terrible fall I had; not from the rock, as you suppose, for then I must not now have been living to enjoy you, but from a far less considerable height in the air. I'll tell you how it happened. A parcel of us young people were upon a merry swang round this arloe, which we usually divert ourselves with at let times of the year, chashing and pursuing one another, sometimes fearing to an extravagant height, and then shooting down again with surprizing precipitancy, till we even touch the trees; when of a sudden we mount again and away. I say, being of this party, and pursued by one of my comrades, I descended down to the very trees, and she after me; but as I mounted, the over shooting me, brushed so stiffly against the upper part of my grundance, that I lost my bearing; and being so near the branches, before I could recover it again, I sunk into the tree, and rendered my grundance useless to me; so that down I came, and that with so much force, that I but just felt my fall, and lost my senses. Whether I cried out or no upon my coming to the ground I cannot say; but if I did, my companion was too far gone by that time to hear or take notice of me; as she, probably, in so swift a flight, saw not my fall. As to the condition I was in, or what happened immediately afterwards, I must be obliged to you for a relation of that; but one thing I was quickly sensible of, and never can forget, viz. that I owe my life, to your care and kindness to me.'

I told her she should have that part of her story from me another time. But,' says I, 'there is something so amazing in these flights, or swangens, as you call them, that I must, as the questions for this day, beg you would let me know what is the method of them. What is the nature of your covering?' (which was at first such an obstacle to my wishes) 'How you put it on? And how you use it in your swangens?'

'Surely, my dear Peter,' says she, 'but that I can deny you nothing, since you are my barkatt, which you seem so passionately to desire, the latter of your questions would not be answered, for it must put me to the blush. As to our method of flight, you saw somewhat of that last night, though in a light hardly sufficient for you; and for the nature of my covering, you perceive that now: but to shew you how it is put on, as you call it, I am afraid it will be necessary, as far as I can, to put it off, before I can make you comprehend that; which having done, the whole will be no farther a mystery. But, not to be tedious, is it your command that I uncover? Lay that upon me, it shall be done.' Here I was at a plunge whether to proceed or drop the question. Thinks I, 'If my curiosity should be fatal to me, as I may see something I can never bear hereafter, I am undone. She waits
the command!—Why so?—I know not the consequence!—What shall I do? At last, somewhat reluctantly, I asked her whether her answer either way to my command would cause her to leave me, or to love her less. She seeing my hesitation, and perceiving the cause, was so pleased, that she cried out, "No, my dear Peter, nor that, nor all the force on earth, shall ever part me from you. But I conceive you are afraid you shall discover something in me you may not like: I fear not that; but an immodest appearance before you I cannot suffer myself to be guilty of, but under your own command."

"My lovely Youwarkee," says I, "delay then my defires no longer; and since you require a warrant from me, I do command you to do it." Immediately her grandee flew open, (discovering her naked body just to the hip, and round the rim of her belly) and expanding itself was near six feet wide. Here my love and curiosity had a hard conflict; the one to gain my attention to the grandee, and the other to retain my eyes and thoughts on her lovely body, which I had never beheld so much of before. Though I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not easily dismiss so charming a sight. I attentively viewed her lovely flesh, and examined the case that enfringed it; but as I shall give you a full description of this grandee hereafter, in a more proper place, I will mention it no farther here, than to tell you that when I had narrowly surveyed the upper part of it, the in a moment contracted it round her so close that the nicest eye could not perceive the joining of the parts.

"Indeed, my dear Youwarkee," says I, "you had the best of reasons for saying you were not fearful I should discover any thing in you displeasing; for if my bosom glowed with love before, you have now therein raised an ardent flame which neither time, nor aught else, will ever be able to extinguish. I now almost conceive how you fly; though yet I am at a loss to know how you extend and make use of the lower part of your grandee, which rises up and meets the upper; but I will rather guess at that by what I have seen, than raise the colour higher in thofe fair cheeks which are, however adorned with blushes."

Then running to her, and taking her in my arms, I called her the gift of Heaven; and left off farther interrogatories till another opportunity.

**CHAP. XVII.**

**YOUWARKEE CANNOT BEAR A STRONG LIGHT—WILKINS MAKES HER SPECTACLES WHICH HELP HER—A DESCRIPTION OF THEM.**

**YOUWARKEE** and I having no other company than one another's, we talked together almost from morning to night, in order to learn each other's dialect. But how compliable ever she was in all other respects, I could not persuade her to go out with me to fetch water, or to the lake, in the day-time. It being now the light season, I wanted her to be more abroad; but she excused herself, telling me her people never came into those luminous parts of the country during the false glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their light was more moderate and steady; and that the place where I resided was not frequented by them for half the year, and at other times only upon parties of pleasure, it not being worth while to settle habitations where they could not abide always. She said, Normnbgsriitt was the finest region in the world, where her king's court was, and a vast kingdom. I asked her twice or thrice more to name the country to me, but not all the art we could use, her's in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me conqueror of that poor monosyllable, (for as such it founded from her sweet lips;) so I relinquished the name to her; telling her, whenever she had any more occasion to mention the place, I desired it might be under the title of Doorpt Swangeanti, which she promised; but wondered, as she could speak the other so glibly, as she called it, I could not do so too.

I told her, that the light of my native country was far stronger than any I had seen since my arrival at Grandee-violet, (for that, I found by her, was the name my dominions went by;) and
and that we had a sun, or ball of fire, which rolled over our heads every day with such a light and such a heat, that it would sometimes almost scorch one it was so hot, and was of such brightness that the eye could not look at it without danger of blindness. She was heartily glad, she said, she was not born in so wretched a land; and she did not believe there was any other so good as her own. I thought no benefit could arise from my combating these innocent prejudices, so I let them alone.

She had often lamented to me the difference of our eye-sight, and the trouble it was to her that she could not at all times go about with me, till she gave me a good deal of uneasiness to see her concern. At last I told her, that though I believed it would be impossible to reduce my sight to the standard of hers, yet I was persuaded I could bring her's to bear the strongest light I had ever seen in this country. She was mightily pleased with the thought of that, and said she wished I might, for she was sensible of no grief like being obliged to stay at home when I went abroad on my business, and was resolved to try my experiment if I pleased, and in the mean time should heartily pray for the success. I hit on the following invention.

I rummaged over all my old things, and by good luck found an old cape hatband. This I tried myself, single, before my own eyes, in the strongest light we had; but believing I had not yet obscured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it should not, I trebled it, and then it seemed too dark for eyes like mine to discover objects through it, and so I judged it would suit her's; for I was determined to produce something, if possible, that would do at first, without repetition of trial, which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper method for fixing it on her, and this I thought would be easily effected, but had much more difficulty in it than I imagined. At first I purposed to tie the cape over her eyes, but trying it myself I found it very rough and fretting; I then designed fixing it to an old crown of a hat that held my fish-hooks and lines, and so let it hang down before her face, but that also had its inconveniences, as it would flap her eyes in windy weather, and would be not only useless but very troublesome in flight; so that I was scarce ever more puzzled before. At last I thought of a method that answered exceedingly well, the hint of which I took from somewhat I had seen with my master when I was at school, which he called goggles, and which he used to tie round his head to screen his eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that plan was composed of old hat pieces of ram's-horn, and the above-mentioned cape.

When I had finished the whole apparatus, I tried it first upon myself, and finding great reason to believe it would perfectly answer the intention, I ran directly to Youwarkee. 'Come,' says I, 'my dear, will you go with me to the water-rill; for I must fetch some this morning?' She shook her head, and with tears in her eyes wished she could. 'But,' says she, 'let me see how light it is abroad.'—'No,' says I, 'my love, you must not look out till you go.'—'Indeed,' says she, 'if it did not affect my eyes and head you should not ask me twice.'—'Well,' says I, 'my Youwarkee, I am now come to take you with me; and that you may not suffer by it, turn about, and let me apply the remedy I told you of for your fight.' She wanted much to see first what it was, but I begged her to forbear till I tried whether it would be useful or not. She told me she would absolutely submit to my direction, so I adjusted the thing to her head. 'Now,' says I, 'you have it on, let us go out and try it, and let me know the moment you find the light offensive, and take particular notice how you are affected.' Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no complaint in all our walk to the lake.

'Now, my dear Youwarkee,' says I, when we got there, 'what do you think of my contrivance? Can you see at all?'—'Yes, very well,' says she. 'But, my dear Peter, you have taken the advantage oft he twilight; I know, to deceive me; and I had rather have stayed at home than have subjected you to return in the night for the sake of my company.' I then allured her it was mid-day, and no later, which pleased her mightily; and,
and, to satisfy her, I untied the string behind; and just let her be convinced it was so. When I had fixed the shade on her head again, she put up her hand and felt the several materials of which it consisted; and after expressing her admiration of it, 'So, my dear Peter,' says she, 'you have now encumbered yourself with a wife indeed, for since I can come abroad in a glaring light with so much ease, you will never henceforward be without my company.' Youwarkee being thus in spirits, we launched the boat, watered, took a draught of fish, and returned; passing the night at home, in talking of the spectacles; (for that was the name I told her they must go by) and of the fishing, for that exercise delighted her to a great degree: but, above all, the spectacles were her chief theme; she handled them and looked at them again and again, and asked several rational questions about them; as how they could have that effect on her eyes, enabling her to see, and the like. She ventured out with them next day by herself; and, as she threatened, she was as good as her word, for the scarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myself, but accompanied me every where freely; and with delight.

C H A P. XVIII.

YOUWARKEE WITH CHILD—WILKINS'S STOCK OF PROVISIONS—NOW BEAST OR FISH IN YOUWARKEE'S COUNTRY—THE VOICES AGAIN—HER REASON FOR NOT SEEING THOSE WHO UTTERED THEM—SHE BEARS A SON—A HARD SPEECH IN HER LYING-IN—DIVERS BIRDS APPEAR—THEIR EGGS GATHERED—HOW WILKINS KEPT ACCOUNT OF TIME.

A BOUT three months after we were married, as we called it, Youwarkee told me she believed she was breeding, and I was mightily pleased with it, for though I had had two children before by Patty, yet I never had seen either of them, so that I longed to be a father. I sometimes amused myself with whimsical conjectures, as whether the child would have a grandee or not; which of us it would be most like; how we should do without a midwife; and what must become of the infant, as we had no milk, in case Youwarkee could not suckle it. Indeed, I had leisure enough for indulging such reveries; for having laid in our winter stores, my wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy ourselves over a good fire, prattling and toying together, making as good cheer as we could; and truly that was none of the worst, for we had as fine bread as need to be eaten; we had pears preserved; all sorts of dried fish; and once a fortnight, for two or three days together, had fresh fish; we had vinegar, and a biting herb, I had found, for pepper; and several sorts of nuts; so there was no want.

It was at this time, after my return from watering one day, where You warkee had been with me, that, having taken several fish, and amongst them some I had not before seen, I asked her, as we were preparing and salling some of them, how they managed fish in her country, and what variety they had of them there; she told me, she neither ever saw nor heard of a fish in her life till the came to me. 'How!' says I, 'no fish amongst you! why you want one of the greatest dainties that can be set upon a table. Do you wholly eat fish,' says I, 'at Doorpt Swangeanti?'—'Flesh!' says she, laughingly, 'of what?'—'Nay,' says I, 'you know best what the beasts of your own country are; we have in England, where I was born and bred, oxen, very large hogs, sheep, lambs, and calves; these make our ordinary dishes: then we have deer, hares, rabbits, and these are reckoned dainties, besides numberless kinds of poultry, and fish without stint.'—'I never heard of any of these things in my life,' says You warkee; 'nor did I ever eat any thing but fruits and herbs, and what is made from them at Normnbudigrfutt.'—'You will speak that crabbed word,' says I, 'again.'—'I beg your pardon, my dear,' says she; at Doorpt Swangeanti I say, nor I, nor any one else, to my knowledge, ever eat any such thing; but seeing you eat fish, as you call them, I made no scruple of doing so too, and like them very well, especially the salted.
PETER WILKINS.

"ones, for I never tafled what you call; I felt neither till I came here. — "I cannot think," says I, "what fort of a country yours is, or how you all live there." — "O," says he, "there is no want; I wish you and I were there." I was afraid I had talked too much of her country already, so we called a new caufe.

Soon after winter had set in, as we were in bed one night, I heard the voices again: and though my wife had told me of her country-folks, Swangeans, in that place, I being frighted a little waked her; and she hearing them too, cried out, "There they are! it is ten to one but my filter or some of our family are there: hark! I believe I hear her voice." I myself hearkened very attentively; and by this time understanding a great deal of their language, I not only could distinguish different speakers, but knew the meaning of several of the words they pronounced.

I would have had Youwarkee have gotten up and called to them. "Not for the world," says he. "Have you a mind to part with me? Though I have no intent to leave you, as I am with child, if they should try to force me away without my consent, I may receive some injury, to the danger of my own life, or at least of the child's." This reason perfectly satisfying me, endeared the loving creature to me ten times more, if possible, than ever.

The next summer brought me a yacoom as fair as alabaster. "My wife was delivered without the usual afflictance, and had as favourable a labour as could be. The first thing I did, after giving her some fish-fouë, made as skilfully as I was able, and a little cordial, was to see if my yacoom had the grandee or not; finding it had, "So," says I to Youwarkee, "you have brought me a legitimate heir to my dominions, whole title pure can not be disputed, being one of you." Though I spoke this with as much pleasure, and in as endearing a way as ever I spoke in my life, and quite innocently, the poor Youwarkee burst into tears to such excess there was no pacifying her. I asked her the reason of her grief, begged and intreated her to let me know what disturbed her, but all in vain; till, seeing me in a violent passion, such as I had never before appeared to be in, she told me she was very sorry I should question her fidelity to me. She surprized me in saying this, as I never had any such apprehension. "No, my dearest wife," says I, "I never had any such suspicion as you charge me with, I can safely affirm; nor can I comprehend your meaning by imputing such a thing to me." — "Oh!" says he, "I am sure you have no cause for it! but you said the poor child was one of us; as much as to intimate, that had it been your own it would have been born as you were, without the grandee: which thought I cannot hear; and if you continue to think so it must end me; therefore take away my life now, rather than let me live to see my farther misery."

I was heartily sorry for what I had said, when I saw the effects of it, though I did not imagine it could have been perverted to such a contrary meaning. But considering her to be the faithfullest and most loving creature upon earth, and that true love cannot bear any thing that touches upon or can be applied (though with ever so forced a construction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous meaning; I attributed her groundless resentment to her excess of fondness only for me; and falling upon the bed by her, and bathing her face in my tears, I assured her the interpretation she had put on my words was altogether foreign from the view they were spoken with; professing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the least caufe of jealousy. On my confirming this absolute confidence in her virtue by the strongest averrations, she grew fully convinced of her error, and acknowledged she had been too rash in cenfuring me; and growing pleased at my fresh professions of love to her, we presently were reconciled, and became again very good friends.

When Youwarkee had gathered strength again, she proved an excellent nurse to my Pedio, (for that was the name I gave him) so that he soon grew a charming child, able to go in his twelfth month, and spoke in his twelfth. This and two other lovely boys I had by her within three years; every one of which she brought up with the breast, and they thrived delicately.

I do not mention the little interven-
ing occurrences which happened during this period; they con-\nfectly upon me, 
ch to the old trade of fishing, watering, \n providing in the summer for the winter, and in managing my salt-work; which all together kept me at full employ-\nment, comfortably to maintain an increasing family.  
- In this time I had found out several new sorts of entables. I had observed, as I said before, abundance of birds about the wood and lake in the summer months. These, by firing at them two or three times on my first coming, I had almost caused to desist my dominions. But as I had for the last two or three years given no disturbance at all to them, they were now in as great plenty as ever; and I made great profit of them by the peace they enjoyed; and yet my table never wanted a supply, fresh in the summer, or salted and pickled in winter.  
I took notice it was about October these birds used to come; and most of the month of November they were busy in laying their eggs, which I used at that time to find in great plenty along the banks of the lake in the reeds, and made great collections of them; I used also to find a great many in the woods amongst the shrubs and underwood. These furnished our table various ways; for, with my cream-cheese flour, and a little mixture of rams-horn juice, I had taught my wife to make excellent puddings of them; abundance of them also we boil or fried alone, and often as sauce to our fish. As for the birds themselves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual means of taking them otherwise by nets, which I let between the trees, and also very large pitfall nets, with which I used to catch all sorts, even from the size of a thrush to that of a tur-\nkey. But as I shall say more of these when I come to speak of my ward bye and bye, and of my poultry, I shall omit any farther mention of them here.  
You may perhaps wonder how I could keep an account of my time so precisely, as to talk of the particular months. I will tell you. At my coming from America, I was then exact; for we set sail the fourteenth of November, and struck the first or second day of February. So far I kept perfect reckoning. But after that I was not so exact; though I kept it as well as my perplexity would admit even then, till the days shortening upon me, prevented it.  
Hereupon I set about making a year for myself. I found the duration of the comparative darkness, or what might with me be termed night, in the course of the twenty four hours or day, gradually increased for six months; after which it decreased reciprocally for an equal time, and the lighter part of the day took it's turn, as in our parts of the world, only inversely: so that as the light's decrease became sensible about the middle of March, it was at the greatest pitch the latter end of August, or beginning of September; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreasing to the close of February, when I had the longest portion of light. Hereupon; dividing my year into two seasons only, I began the winter half in March, and the summer half in September. Thus my winter was the spring and summer quarters of us in Europe, and my summer those of our autumn and winter.  
From my settling this matter I kept little account of days or weeks, but only reckoned my time by summer and winter; so that I am pretty right as to the revolutions of these; though the years, as to their notation, I kept no account of, nor do I know what year of the Lord it is now.  

C H A P. XIX.  
WILKINS'S CONCERN ABOUT CLOATHING FOR PEDRO HIS ELDEST SON—HIS DISCOURSE WITH HIS WIFE ABOUT THE SHIP—HER FLIGHT TO IT—HIS MELANCHOLY REFLECTIONS TILL HER RETURN—AN ACCOUNT OF WHAT SHE HAD DONE, AND OF WHAT SHE BROUGHT—SHE CLOATHS HER CHILDREN, AND TAKES A SECOND FLIGHT.  
A my boy Pedro grew up, though, as I said before, he had the grandee, yet it was of less dimensions than it ought to have been to be useful to him; so that it was visible he could never fly, for it would scarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from side to side both ways.
This pleased my wife to the heart; for now she was sure, whatever I had done before, I could not suspect her. Be that as it will, the boy's grandeur not being a sufficient venment for him, it became necessary he should be clothed.

I turned over my heard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at least, that we knew how to fit him with. I had described my own country vest for lads to Youwarkee, and she formed a tolerable idea of it, but we had no tackle to alter any thing with. * O my dear,* says I, * had I but been born with the grandee, I need not be now racking my brains: to get my child cloaths. *—* What do you mean by that?* says she.—* Why,* says I, * I would have flown to my ship, (for I had long before related to her all my sea-adventures, till the vessel's coming to the magnetical rock) and have brought some such things from thence, as you, not wanting them in this country, can have no notion of.* She seemed mighty inquisitive to understand how a ship was made, what it was most like to, how a person who never saw one might know it only by the description, and how one might get into it; with abundance of the like questions. She then enquired what sort of things those needles and several other utensils were, which I had at times been speaking of; and in what part of a ship they usually kept such articles. And I, to gratify her curiosity, as I perceived she took a pleasure in hearing me, answered all her questions to a scruple; not then conceiving the secret purpose of all this inquisitiveness.

About two days after this, having been out two or three hours in the morning, to cut wood; at coming home I found Pedro crying, ready to break his heart, and his little brother Tommy hanging to him, and crawling about the floor after him: the youngest, pretty baby! was fast asleep upon one of the beast-fish skins, in a corner of the room. I asked Pedro for his mother, but the poor infant had nothing farther to say to the matter, than * Mammy run away, I cry! Mammy run away, I cry!* I admired where she was gone, never before missing her from our habitation. However, I waited patiently till bed-time, but no wife. I grew very uneasy then. Yet, as my children were tired and sleepy, I thought I had best go to bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their fuppers, we lay down together. They slept: but my mind was too full to permit the closure of my eyes. A thousand different chimeras swam in my imagination relating to my wife. * One while I fancied her carried away by her kinsfolks; then, that she was gone of her own accord to make peace with her ffather. But that thought would not fix, being put aside by her constant tenderness to her children, and regard to me; whom I was sure she would not have left without notice.* * But, alas!* says I, * she may even now be near me, but taken so ill she cannot get home; or she may have died suddenly in the wood.* I lay tumbling and toffing in great anxiety, not able to find out any excusable occasion she could have of so long absence. * And then,* thinks I, * if she should either be dead, or have quite left me, which will be of equally bad consequence to me, what can I do with three poor helpless infants? If they were a little more grown up, they might be helpful to me; and to each other; but at their age how shall I ever rear them without the tenderness of a mother? And to see them pine away, before my face, and not know how to help them, will distract me.*

Finding I could neither sleep nor lie still, I rose, intending to search all the woods about, and call to her, that if any accident had prevented sight of her, she might at least hear me. But upon opening the door, and just stepping out, how agreeably was I surprized to meet her coming in, with something on her arm. * My dear.* * Youwarkee,* says I, * where have you been? What has befallen you to keep you out so long? The poor children have been at their wit's end to find you; and I, my dear, have been most uneasy, and was now, almost distracted, coming in search of you.* Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what concern she had given me and the children. * My dear Peter,* says she, (kissing me) * pray forgive me the only thing I have ever done to offend you, and the last cause you shall ever have, by my good will, to complain of me; but walk within doors,*
doors, and I will give you a farther account of my absence. Don't you remember what delight I took the other day to hear you talk of your ship?—Yes, says I, 'you did so; but what of that?'—Nay, pray, says she, 'forgive me; for I have been to see it.'—That's impossible,' says I; and truly this was the first time I ever thought she went about to decease me. 'I do assure you,' says she, 'I have; and a wonderful thing it is! But if you distrust me, and what I say, I have brought proof of it; step out with me to the verge of the wood, and satisfy yourself.'—'But pray, says I, 'who presented you with this upon your arm?'—'I vow,' says she, 'I had forgot this; yes, this will, I believe, confirm to you what I have said.' I turned it over and over, and looking witfully upon her, says I, 'This waistcoat, indeed, is the very fellow to one that lay in the captain's locker in the cabin.'—Say not the very fellow,' says she, 'but rather say the very same; for I'll assure you it is so; and had you been with me, we might have got so many things for ourselves and the children, we should never have wanted more, though we lived these hundred years; but as it is, I have left something without the wood for you to bring up.' When we had had our talk out, the hearing the children stir, took them up, and was going, as she always did, to get their breakfasts. Hold,' says I, 'this journey must have fatigued you too much already, lay yourself to rest, and leave every thing else to me.'—'My dear,' says she, 'you seem to think this flight tiresome, but you are mistaken; I am more weary with walking to the lake and back again, than with all the rest. Oh,' says she, 'if you had but the grandee, flying would rest you, after the greatest labour; for the parts which are moved with exercise on the earth, are all at rest in flight; as, on the contrary, the parts used in flight are when on earth travel. The whole trouble of flight is in mounting from the plain ground, but when once you are upon the grandee, at a proper height, all the rest is play, a mere trifle; you need only think of your way, and incline to it, your grandee directs you as readily as your feet obey you on the ground, without thinking of every step you take; it does not require labour, as your boat does, to keep you a going.'

After we had composed ourselves, we walked to the verge of the wood, to see what cargo my wife had brought from the ship. I was astonished at the bulk of it; and seeing, by the outside, it consisted of cloaths, I took it with much ado upon my shoulders, and carried it home. But upon opening it I found far more treasure than I could have imagined; for there was a hammer, a great many spikes and nails, three spoons, about five plates of pewter, four knives and a fork, a small china punch-bowl, two chocolate-cups, a paper of needles, and several of pins, a parcel of coarse thread, a pair of shoes, and abundance of such other things as she had heard me with for and describe besides as much linen and woollen, of one sort or another, as made a good package for all the other things; with a great tin porridge-pot, of about two gallons, tied to the outside, and all these as nicely stowed as if she had been bred a packer.

When I had viewed the bundle, and poised the weight; 'How was it possible, my dear Youwaree,' said I, 'for you to bring all this? You could never carry them in your hands.'—'No, no,' replied she, 'I carried them on my back.'—'Is it possible,' says I, 'for your grandee to bear yourself and all this weight too in the air, and to such an height as the top of these rocks?'—'You will always,' replies she, 'make the height a part of your difficulty in flying; but you are deceived; for as the first stroke (I have heard you say often) in fighting is half the battle, so it is in flying; get but once fairly on the wind, nothing can hurt you afterwards. My method, let me tell you, was this; I climbed to the highest part of the ship, where I could stand clear, having first put up my burden, which you have there; and then getting that on my back near my shoulders, I took the two cords you see hang loose to it in my two hands, and extending my grandee, leaped off flatwise with my face towards the water;
when instantly playing two or three
good strokes with my grannie, I
was out of danger; now, if I had
found the bundle too heavy to make
my first strokes with, I should di-
rectly have turned on my back, drop-
ped my bundle, and floated in my
grannie to the ship again, as you
once saw me float on the lake.' Says
I, 'you must have flown a prodigious
distance to the ship, for I was several
days failing, I believe three weeks,
from my ship before I reached the
gulph; and after that could be little
less than five weeks (as I accounted
for it) and at a great rate of failing
too under the rock, before I reached
the lake; so that the ship must be a
monstrous way off.'—No, no, says
she, 'your ship lies but over yon cliff,
that rises as it were with two points;
and as to the rock itself, it is not
broader than our lake is long; but
what made you so tedious in your
pillage was, many of the windings
and turnings in the cavern returning
into themselves again; so that you
might have gone round and round
till this time if the tide had not
luckily struck you into the direct
pillage: this, says she, 'I have
heard from some of my countrymen,
who have flown up it, but could
never get quite through.'
'I with all my heart,' says I,
fortune had brought me first to light
in this country; or (but for your
lake I could almost say) had never
brought me into it at all; for to be
a creature of the least significancy
of the whole race about one, is a me-
lancholy circumstance.'—'Fear not,'
says she, 'my love, for you have a
wife will hazard all for you, though
you are restrained; and as my incli-
nations and affections are so much
yours, that I need but know your
defires to execute them as far as my
power extends; surely you, who can
act by another, may be content to
forego the trouble of your own per-
formance. I perceive, indeed,' con-
tinued she, 'you want mightily to go
to your ship, and are more uneasy
now you know it is safe, than you
was before; but that being part my
skill to assist you in, if you will com-
mand your deputy to go backwards
and forwards in your stead, I am
ready to obey you.'

Thus ended our conversation about
the ship for that time. But it left not
my mind so soon; for a stronger han-
kening after it pursued me now than
ever since my wife's flight, but to no
purpose.

We fat us down, and forted out our
cargo, piece by piece; and having
found several things proper for the
children, my wife longed to enter upon
some piece of work towards cloathing
Pedro in the manner she had heard me
talk of, and laid hard at me to shew
her the use of the needles, thread, and
other things she had brought. Indeed,
I must say she proved very tractable;
and from the little instruction I was
able to give her, soon outwrought my
knowledge; for I could only shew her
that the thread went through the needle,
and both through the cloth to hold it
together; but for any thing else I was
as ignorant as she. In much less time
than I could have imagined, she had
cloathed my son Pedro, and had made
a sort of mantle for the youngest. But
now seeing us so smart, (for I took
upon me sometimes to wear the green
waistcoat she had brought under my
dirty jacket) she began to be ashamed
of her self, as she said, in our fine com-
pany; and afterwards (as I shall soon
acquaint you) got into our fashion.

Seeing the advantages of her flight
to the ship, and that so many conve-
niences arose from it, she was fre-
quently at me to let her go again. I
should as much have wished for an-
other return of goods as she, but I could
by no means think of parting with my
factor; for I knew her eagerness to
please me, and that she would stick at
nothing to perform it; 'And,' thinks
I, 'should any accident happen to her,
by over loading, or otherwise, and I
should lose her, all the other com-
modities of the whole world put to-
gether would not compensate her
loss.' But as she so earnestly desired it,
and assured me she would run no
hazards, I was prevailed on at length,
by her incessant importunities, to let
her go; though under certain restric-
tions, which the promised me to com-
ply with. As first, I insisted upon it
that she should take a tour quite round
the rock, setting out the same way I
had last gone with my boat; and, if
possible, find out the gulph, which I
told her she could not mistake, by rea-
reason of the noise the fall of the water made; and desired her to remark the place, so as I might know within side where it was without. And then I told her she might review and search every hole in the ship as she pleased; and if there were any small things she had a mind to bring from it, she was welcome, provided the bundle she should make up was not above a fourth part either of the bulk or weight of the raft. All which she, having engaged punctually to observe, she bid me not expect her till I saw her, and she would return as soon as possible. I then went with her to the confines of the wood, (for I told her I desired to see her mount) and she, after we had embraced, bidding me to stand behind her, took her flight.

"CHAP. XX.

THE AUTHOR OBSERVES HER FLIGHT—A DESCRIPTION OF A GLOMM IN THE GRAUNDEE—SHE FINDS OUT THE GULPH, NOT FAR FROM THE SHIP—BRINGS HOME MORE GOODS; MAKES HER A GOWN BY HER HUSBAND'S INSTRUCTION.

I had ever since our marriage been desirous of seeing Youwackee fly, but this was the first opportunity I had of it; and indeed the sight was worthy of all the attention I paid it; for I desired her slowly to put herself in proper order for it, that I might make my observation the more accurately; and shall now give you an account of the whole apparatus, though several parts of the description were taken from subsequent views; for it would have been impossible to have made just remarks of every thing at that once, especially as I only viewed her back parts then.

I told you before, I had seen her grandee open, and quite extended, as low as her middle; but that being in the grotto by lamp-light, I could not take to just a survey as now, when the form of light we ever had was at the brightest.

She first threw up two long branches or ribs of the whale-bone, as I called it before, (and indeed for several of it's properties, as toughnefs, elaticity, and pliablenefs, nothing I have ever seen can be justly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper bone of the spine, and which, when not extended, lie bent over the shoulders on each side of the neck forwards; from whence, by nearer and nearer approaches, they just meet at the lower rim of the belly in a sort of point; but when extended they stand their whole length above the shoulders, not perpendicularly, but spreading outwards, with a web of the finest and most pliable and springy membrane, that can be imagined, in the interstice between them, reaching from their root or joint on the back up above the hinder part of the head, and near half-way their own length; but when closed the membrane falls down in the middle upon the neck, like an handcuff. There are also two other ribs rising as it were from the same root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not so long as the others. These are filled up in the interstice between them and the upper ones with the same membrane; and on the lower side of this is also a deep flap of the membrane, so that the arms can be either above or below it in flight, and are always above it when closed. This last rib, when shut, flaps under the upper one, and also falls down with it before to the waist, but is not joined to the ribs below. Along the whole spine-bone runs a strong flat, broad, grilly cartilage, to which are jointed several other of these ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the interstices with the above membrane, and are jointed to the ribs of the person just where the plane of the back begins to turn towards the breast and belly; and, when shut, wrap the body round to the joints on the contrary side, folding neatly one side over the other. At the lower spine are two more ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the hips, and long enough to meet the joint on the contrary side across the belly; and from the hip-joint, which is on the outermost edge of the hip-bone, runs a pliable cartilage quite down the outside of the thigh and leg to the ankle; from which there branch out divers other ribs horizontally also when open, but when closed they encompass the whole thigh and leg, rolling inwards across the back of the leg K and
and thigh, till they reach and just cover the cartilage. The interlaced interlaced
of these are also filled up with the same membrane. From the two ribs which
join to the lower spine-bone there hangs down a sort of short apron, very full
of plaits, from hip-joint to hip-joint, and reaches below the buttocks, half
way or more to the limbs. This has also several small limber ribs in it. Just
upon the lower spine-joint, and above the apron, as I call it, there are
two other long branches, which, when closed, extend upon the back from
the point they join at below to the shoulders, where each rib has a clapper, which
reaching over the shoulders, just under the fold of the uppermost branch
or ribs, hold up the two ribs flat to the back like a V, the interlaced
of which are also filled up with the afore-said membrane. This last piece, in
flight, falls down almost to the ankles, where the two clappers lapping under
each leg within-side, hold it very fast; and then also the short apron is drawn
up, by the strength of the ribs in it, between the thighs forward, and
covers as far as the rim of the belly. The whole arms are covered also from
the shoulders to the wrap with the same delicate membrane, fastened to
ribs of proportionable dimensions, and jointed to a cartilage on the outside in
the same manner as on the legs.

It is very surprizing to feel the differ-
ence of these ribs when open and
when closed; for closed they are as pliable as the finest whalebone, or more so; but when extended, are as strong and stiff as a bone. They are taper-
ing from the roots, and are broader or narrower, as best suits the places they occupy, and the fires they are put to, up to their points, which are almost as small as a hair. The membrane be-
tween them is the most elastick thing I ever met with, occupying no more space, when the ribs are closed, than just from rib to rib, as flat and smooth as possible; but when extended in some postures, will dilate itself surpriz-
ingly. This will be better comprehended by the plates, where you will see several glumms and gawreys in different attitudes, than expressed by
words.

As soon as my wife had expanded
the whole grandee, being upon plain ground, she flopped forward, moving
with a heavy wriggling motion at first,
which put me into some pain for her;
but after a few strokes, beginning to
rise a little, she cut through the air like
lightning, and was soon over the edge of
the rock, and out of my sight.

It is the most amazing thing in the
world to observe the large expansion of
this grandee when open; and, when
closed, (as it all is in a moment upon
the party's decent) to see it fit so close
and compact to the body, as no tailor
can come up to it; and then the seve-
ral ribs lie so justly disposed in the
several parts, that instead of being, as
one would imagine, a disadvantage to
the shape, they make the body and limbs
look extremely elegant; and by the
different adjustment of their lines on
the body and limbs, the whole, to my
fancy, somewhat resembles the drefs of
the old Roman warriors in their buff-
kins; and, to appearance, seems much
more noble than any factitious garb I
ever saw, or can frame a notion of
to myself.

Though these people in height,
shape, and limb, very much resemble
the Europeans, there is yet this differ-
ence, that their bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their limbs,
though as long and well-shaped, are
femlso thick as ours; and this I
observed generally in all I saw of them
during a long time among them afterwards; but their skin, for beauty and
crafts, exceeds ours very much.

My wife having now taken her sec-
ond flight, I went home, and never
left my children till her return: this
was three days after our parting. I
was in bed with my little ones when
she knocked at the door. I soon let
her in, and we received each other with
a glowing welcome. The news she
brought me was very agreeable. She
told me she first went and tried into
every nook in the ship, where she had
seen such things, could we get at them,
as would make us very happy. Then
she set out the way I told her to go, in
order to find the gulph. She was much
afraid she should not have discovered
it, though she flew very slow, that she
might be sure to hear the water-fall,
and not over-shoot it. It was long ere
she came at it; but when she did, she
perceived she might have spared most
of her trouble, had she set out the
other way; for, after she had flown
almost
almost round the island, and not before, she began to hear the fall, and, upon coming up to it, found it to be not above six minutes flight from the ship. She said the entrance was very narrow; and, she thought, lower than I represented it; for she could scarce discern any space between the surface of the water and the arch-way of the rock. I told her that might happen from the rife or fall of the sea itself. But I was glad to hear the ship was no farther from the gulf; for my head was never free from the thoughts of my ship and cargo. She then told me she had left a small bundle for me without the wood, and went to look after her children. I brought up the bundle; and though it was not near so large as the other, I found several useful things in it, wrapped up in four or five yards of dark blue woollen-cloth, which I knew no name for, but which was thin and light, and about a yard wide. I asked her where she met with this stuff: she answered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our bed, in a cloth like our sheet, which she cut open, and took it out of.—

"Well," says I, "and what will you do with this?"—"Why, I will make me a coat, like yours," says she; "for I don't like to look different from my dear husband and children."—

"No, Youwarkee," replied I, "you must not do so: if you make such a jacket as mine, there will be no distinction between glumbl and gawrey; the gowne prawe, in my country, would not on any account go dressed like a glumm; for they wear a fine flowing garment called a gown, that fits tight about the waitit, and hangs down from thence in folds, like your barras, almost to the ground, so that you can hardly discern their feet, and no other part of their body but their hands and face, and about as much of their necks and breasts as you see in your grawn-dée."

Youwarkee seemed highly delighted with this new-fancied dress, and worked day and night at it against the cold weather. Whilst she employed herself thus, I was busied in providing my winter foours; which I was forced to do alone now, herself and children taking up all my wife's time. About a fortnight after she had begun mantua-making, she presented herself to me one day as I came from work in her new gown; and, truly, considering the scanty description I had given her of such a garment, it appeared a good comely dress. Though it had not one plait about the body, it fit very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a countess; for she would have put it all in (all the stuff she had) had there been as much more of it. I could see no opening before, so asked her how she got it on. She told me she laid along on the ground, and crept through the plaits at the bottom, and sewed the body round her after she had got her hands and arms through the sleeves. I wondered at her contrivance; and, smiling, showed her how she should put it on, and also how to pin it before: and after she had done that, and I had turned up about half a yard of sleeve, which then hung down to her fingers ends, I kissed her, and called her my country-woman, of which and her new gown she was very proud for a long time.

C H A P. XXI.


One day, as I was traversing the woods to view my bird-traps, looking into the underwood among the great trees on my right-hand, I saw a wood-hen (a bird I used to call so, from it's resemblance in make to our English poultry) come out of a little thicket. I know not whether my rustling or what had disturbed it; but I let her pass, and she ran away before me. When she was fairly out of sight, I stepped up, and found she had a nest and sixteen eggs there. I exactly marked the place; and taking away one of the eggs, I broke it, at some distance from the nest, to see how forward they were; and I had no sooner broke the shell but out came a young chicken. I then looked into the nest again, and taking up more of the eggs, I found them all just splintered in the shell, and ready for hatching. I had immediately a desire to save them, and bring them up tame;
but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little
strengthened under the hen, they would all die; so I let them remain till next
day. In the mean while I prepared some
small netting of such a proper size as
I conceived would do; and with this
I contrived, by fastening it to stakes
which I fixed in the ground, to sur-
round the net, and me on the outside
of it. All the while I was doing this
the hen did not stir, so that I thought
she had either been absent when I came,
or had hatched and gone off with the
young ones. As to her being gone I
was under no concern; for I had no
defign to catch her, but only to con-
fine the chickens within my net if
they were hatched. But, however, I
went nearer, and peeping in, found
the fat still, squeeving herself as flat to
the ground as she could. I was in
twenty minds whether to take her first,
and then catch the chickens, or to let
her go off, and then clap upon them;
but as I proposed to let her go, I
thought if she would sit still till I had
got the chickens, that would be the
best way; so I softly kneeled down
before her, and flidding my hand under
her, I gently drew out two, and put
them in a bag I had in my left-hand.
I then dipped again and again, taking
two every turn; but going a fourth
time, as I was bringing out my prize,
the hen jumped up, flew out, and
made such a noise, that, though I the
minute before saw fix or seven more
chicks in a lump where she had sat, and
kept my eye upon them, yet, before I
could put the last two I had got into
my bag, these were all gone, and in
three hours search I could not find one
of them, though I was sure they could
not pass my net, and must be within
the compass of a small room, my toils
involving no more. After tiring my-
self with looking for them, I marched
home with those eight I had got.
I told Youwarkee what I had done,
and how I intended to manage the
little brood, and, if I could, to bring
them up tame. We kept them some
time very warm by the fire, and fed
them often, as I had seen my mother
give her early chickens; and in a
fortnight's time they were as stout and
famled as common poultry. We kept
them a long time in the house; and
when I fed them I always used them
to a particular whistle, which I also
taught my wife, that they might know
both us and their feeding time; and
in a very short while they would come
running, upon the usual sound, like
barn-door fowls to the name of Biddy.
There happened in this brood to be
five hens and three cocks; and they
were now so tame that, having cut
their wings, I let them out, when the
weather favoured, at my door, where
they would pick about in the wood,
and get belt part of their subsistence;
and having used them to roost in a
corner of my anti-chamber, they all
came in very regularly at night, and
took their places. My hens, at the
usual season, laid me abundance of
eggs, and hatched me a brood or two
each of chickens; so that now I was
at a loss to know what to do with
them, they were become so numerous.
The anti-chamber was no longer a pro-
per receptacle of such a flock, and
therefore I built a little house, at a
small distance from my own, on pur-
pose for their reception and entertain-
ment. I had by this time cleared a
spot of ground on one side of my
grotto, by burning up the timber and
underwood which had covered it: this
I inclosed, and within that inclosure I
raised my aviary; and my poultry
thrived very well there, seemed to like
their habitation, and grew very fat.
My wife and I took much delight in
visiting and feeding them, and it
was a fine diversion also to my boys;
but at the end of summer, when all
the other birds took their annual flight,
away went every one of my new-raised
brood with them, and one of my old
cocks, the rest of the old fat remaining
very quiet with me all the winter.
The next summer, when my chicks of
that year grew up a little, I cut their
wings, and by that means preserved
all but one, which I suppos'd was either
not cut so close as the rest, or his wings
had grown again. From this time I
found, by long experience, that not
two out of a hundred that had once
wintered with me would ever go away,
though I did not cut their wings; but
all of the same season would certainly
go off with the wild ones, if they could
any ways make a shift to fly. I after-
wards got a breed of black-necks,
which was a name I gave them from
the peculiar blackness of their necks,
Iet the rest of their bodies be of what colour they would, as they are indeed of all colours. These birds were as big or bigger than a turkey, of a delicious flavour, and were bred from turkey eggs hatched under my own wood-hens in great plenty. I was forced to clip these as I did the other young fowl, to keep them; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every night during the dark season. The greatest difficulty now was to get meat for all these animals in the winter, when they would sit on the roof: two days together, if I did not call and feed them, which I was sometimes forced to do by lamp-light, or they would have starved in cloudy weather. But I overcame that want of food by an accidental discovery; for I observed my black-necks in the woods jump many times together at a sort of little round heads or pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a shrub that grew in great abundance there. I cut several of these heads, and carrying them home with me broke them, and took out a spoonful or more from each head of small yellow seeds; which giving to my poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I soon laid in a flock for twice my number of mouths, so that they never after wanted. I tried several times to raise a breed of water-fowl by hatching their eggs under my hens; but not one in ten of the forts, when hatched, were fit to eat; and those that were never would live and thrive with me, but got away to the lake, I having no fort of water nearer me; so I dropped my design of water-fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my land-fowl so constantly in my farm-yard, I never wanted of that fort at my table, where we eat abundance of them; for my whole side of the lake in a few years was like a farm-yard, so full of poultry that I never knew my flock; and upon the usual whistle they would flock round me from all quarters. I had every thing now but cattle, not only for the support but convenience and pleasure of life; and so happily should I have fared here, if I had had but a cow and bull, a ram and sheep, that I would not have changed my dominions for the crown of England.

CHAP. XXII.

REFLECTIONS ON MANKIND—THE AUTHOR WANTS TO BE WITH HIS SHIP—PROJECTS GOING, BUT PERCEIVES IT IMPRACTICABLE—YOUWARKEE OFFERS HIS SERVICE, AND GOES—AN ACCOUNT OF HER TRANSACTIONS ON BOARD—REMARKS ON HER SAGACITY—SHE DISPATCHES SEVERAL CHESTS OF GOODS THROUGH THE GULPH TO THE LAKE—AN ACCOUNT OF A DANGER SHE ESCAPED—THE AUTHOR HAS A FIT OF SICKNESS.

STRANGE is the temper of mankind; who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any return from my ship, I reeded tolerably easy, and but seldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her, thinking myself happy in what I had, and compleatly so since my union with my dear wife: but after I had got what I could have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the rest, and thought I should never enjoy true happiness while even a plank of the ship remained. My head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wished for her in the lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I should be an emperor; and though I wanted for nothing to maintain life, and had so good a wife and five children I was very fond of, yet the one thing I had not, reduced the comfort of all the rest to a scanty pattern, even so low as to destroy my whole peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the cavern again, but was restrained from the attempt by the certain impracticableness of it. Then I thought Youwarkee should make another trip to the ship: ‘But what can she bring from it,’ says I to myself, ‘in respect of what must be left behind? Her whole life will not suffice to clear it in, at the rate she can fetch the loading hither in parcels.’ At last a project started, that as there were so many chiefs on board, Youwarkee should fill some of them, and send them through the gulph to take their chance for the lake. This at first sight seemed feasible; but then I considered how
how they could be got from the ship to the gulph; and again, that they would never keep out the water, and if they filled with a lading in them they would sink; or, if this did not happen, they might be dashed to pieces against the crags in the cavern. These apprehensions stopped me again; till, unwilling to quit the thought, 'True,' says I, 'this may happen to some; but if I get but one in five, it is better than nothing.' Thus I turned and wound the affair in my mind; but objections still started too obtrusive to be conquered.

In the height of my soliloquy in comes Youwarkee; and seeing my dejected look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly that I could get no rest from day to day ever since the first went to the ship, to think such a number of good things lay there to be a prey to the sea, as the ship wafted, when they might be of such infinite service here; and that, since her last flight, I had suffered the more, when I thought how near the gulph was to the ship; so that I could not get thither myself with my boat, I would contrive to pack up the goods in the chests that were on board, and, carrying them in the boat, drop them near the draft of the water, which of itself would suck them under the rock down the gulph; and when they were passed through the cavern, I might take them up in the lake. 'Well,' says she, 'Peter, and why cannot I do this for you?' — 'No,' says I, 'even this has its objections.' Then I told her what I feared of their taking water, or dashing against the rock, and twenty other ways of frustrating my views; 'But, above all,' says I, 'how can you get such large and weighty things to the gulph without a boat? There is another impossibility! it won't do.'

Youwarkee eyed me attentively. — 'Pr'ythee, my dear Peter,' says she, 'set your heart at rest about that. I can only try: if no good is to be done, you shall soon know it, and must rest contented under the disappointment.' I told her if I was there, I could take all the things out of the chest, and then melt some pitch and pour into every crack, to keep out the water when they were set aloft.

'Pitch!' says she, 'what's that!' — 'Why,' says I, 'that is a nasty, hard, black sticking thing, that stands in tubs in the ship, and which being put over the fire in any thing to melt, will grow liquid, and when it is cold be hard again, and will fill the water and keep it out.' Says she, 'How can I put this pitch within side of the chest-lid when I have tied it up?' — 'It is to no manner of purpose,' says I, 'to talk of it; so there's an end of it.' — 'But,' says she, 'suppose yourself itself there, what things would you bring first?' I then entered into a long detail of particulars; saying, I would have this and that, and so on, till I had scarce left out a thing I either knew of or could suppose to be in the ship; and, for fear I had not mentioned all, says I, at last, 'If I was there, I believe I should leave but little portable behind me.'

'So, so, my dear,' says Youwarkee, 'you would roll in riches, I find; but you have mentioned never a new gown for me.' — 'Why, aye!' says I, 'I would have that too.' — 'But how would you melt the pitch?' says she. '0,' says I, 'there is a tin-der-box and matches in a room below, upon the side of the fire-hearth.' And then I let her see one I had brought with me, and showed her the use of the flint and steel. 'Well, my dear,' says she, 'will you once more trust me?' I told her, her going would be of little more use than to get a second gown, or some such thing; but if she was discreet, I would let her make another flight on her promise to be back as soon as possible.

In the evening she set out, and paid two days, and till the night of the third. I would here observe, that though it was much lighter and brighter on the outside of the rock where the ship lay, than with us at Graundoverlet, yet having always her spectacles with her, I heard no more complaint of the glare of light she used to be so much afraid of: indeed, she always avoided the fire and lamp at home as much as she could, because she generally took off her spectacles within doors; but when at any time she had them on, she could bear both well enough.

Upon her return again, she told me
He had shipped some goods to sea for me, which he hoped would arrive safe, (for by this time he had had my fearing terius so often over, she could apply them very properly) and that they were in six chests, which she had pitched after my directions. 'Aye!' says I; 'you have pitched them into the sea, perhaps; but, after my directions, I am satisfied, was beyond yourability.'—'You glumms,' says she, 'think us gawreys very ignorant; but I'll satisfy you we are not so dull of apprehension as you would make us. Did not you saw me one day how your boat was tarred and caulked, as you call it?'—'I did,' says I; 'what then?'—'I'll tell you,' says she. 'When I had emptied the first chest, and set it properly, I looked about for your pitch, which at last I found by it's sticking to my fingers; I then put a good piece into a fort of a little kettle, with a long handle, that lay upon the pitch.'—'O, the pitch-ladle!' says I. 'I know not what you call it,' says she; but then I made a fire, as you told me, and melted that stuff; afterwards turning up the chest-side-ways, and then end-ways, I poured it into it, and let it settle in the cracks, and with an old flocking, such as yours, dipped into the pitch, I rubbed every place where the boards joined. I then set the chest on the side of the ship, and when the pitch was cold and hardened in it, filled it top-full of things, but when I had done thus, and shut the lid, I found that would not come so close but I could get the blade of a knife through any where between it and the chest; whereupon I cut some long slips of the cloth I was packing up, and fitting them all round the edge of the chest, I dipped them into the pitch, and laid them on hot; and where one slip would not do, I put two; and flattering the lid down close upon them, I nailed it, as I had seen you do some things, quite round; then tying a rope to the handle, I tipped the chest into the sea, holding the rope. I watched it some time, and seeing it swim well, I took flight with the rope in my hand, and drew the chest after me to the gulph, when letting go the rope, away it went. I served five more in the same manner; and now, my dearest, I am here to tell you I hope you will be able to see at least some of them, one time or other, in the lake.'

I admired in all this at the sagacity of the gawreys. 'Alas!' thinks I, 'what narrow-hearted creatures are mankind? Did I not heretofore look upon the poor blacks in Africa as little better than beasts, till my friend Glanipze convinced me, by disabling the crocodile, the passage of the river, and several other achieve-ments, that my own excellences might have perished in a defart without his genius; and now what could I, or almost any of us master-pieces of the creation, (as we think ourselves) and Heaven's peculiar fa-vourites, have done in this present cafe, that has been omitted by this woman, (for I may justly title her so in an eminent degree) and that in a way to which she was bred an utter stranger.'

After what I had heard from You-warkee, I grew much more cheerful; which she, poor creature, was remarkably pleased with. She went with me constantly once, and sometimes twice, a day, for several days together, to see what success at the lake; till at length she grew very impatient, for fear, as she afterwards told me, I should either think she had not done what she said, or had done it in an ineffectual manner. But one day, walking by the lake, I thought I saw something floating in the water at a very great distance. 'Youwarkee,' says I, 'I spy a fault!' Then running to my boat, and taking her in, away we went, plying my oars with all my might; for I longed to see what it was. At nearer view I perceived it to be one of my wife's fleet. But what added to my satisfaction was to see Youwarkee so pleased, for she could scarcely contain herself.

When we came close to it, up she started: 'Now, my dear Peter,' says she, 'torment yourself no more about your goods on board; for if this will do, all shall be your own.' She then lent me a hand to take it in; but we had both work enough to compass it, the wood had soaked in so much water. We then made the best of our way homewards to my wet-dock; when, just as we had landed our trea-
sure, we saw two more boxes coming
down the stream both together; where-
upon we launched again, and brought
them in one by one for I did not
care to trust them both on one bottom,
my boat being in years, and growing
somewhat crazy.

We had now made a good day's
work of it; so, mooring the boat, we
went home, intending to be out next
morning early with the cart, to convey
our imports to the grotto.

After supper, Youwarkee looking
very earnestly at me, with tears just
glittering in her eyes, broke out in
these words— 'What should you have
thought, Peter, to have seen me come
sailing, drowned, through the ca-
vern, tied to one of your chests?—
Heaven forbid such a thought, my
charmer!' says I. 'But, as you
know I must have been rendered the
most miserable of all living creatures
by such a sight, or any thing else
that would deprive me of you, pray
tell me how you could possibly have
such a thought in your head?' She
saw she had railed my concern, and
was very sorry for what she had said.

'Nothing, nothing,' says she, 'my
dear! it was only a fancy just come
into my head.'— 'My dear Youwee,'
says I, 'you must let me know what
you mean; I am in great pain till
you explain yourself; for I am sure
there is something more in what you
say than fancy; therefore, pray, if
you love me, keep on the rack
no longer.'— 'Ah, Peter!' says she,
there was but a span between me and
death not many days ago; and when
I saw the line of the last chest we
took up just now, it gave me so much
horror, I could scarce keep upon my
feet.'— 'My dear Youwee, proceed,'
says I; for I cannot bear my torment
till I have heard the worst.'— 'Why,
Peter,' says she, 'now the danger
is over, I shall tell you my escape
with as much pleasure as I guess
you will take in hearing of it.'—
'You must know, my life,' says she,
that having cast that chest into the
sea, as I was tugging it along by
that very line, it being one of the
heaviest, and moving but slowly; I
twisted the string several times round
my hand, one fold upon another,
the easier to tow it; when, drawing
it rather too quick into the eddy, it
pulled so hard against me, towards
the gulph, and so quick, that I
could no way loosen or disengage
the cord from my fingers, but was
dragged thereby to the very rock,
against which the chest struck vio-
ently. My last thought, as I sup-
posed it, was of you, my dear,' (on
which she clasped me round the neck,
in sense of her part agony,) 'when,
taking myself for lost, I forbore far-
ther resistance; at which instant the
line, slackening by the rebound of
the chest, fell from my hand of it-
self; and the chest, returning to the
rock, went down the current. I
took a turn or two round on my
grandee to recollect my past dan-
ger, and went back to the ship, fully
resolved to avoid the like shame for
the future. Indeed I did not easily
recover my spirits, and was so terri-
fied with the thought, that I had half
a mind to have left the two remain-
ing chests behind me; but as danger
overcome gives fresh resolution, I
again set to work, and discharged
them also down the gulph, as I hope
you will see in good time.'

My heart bled within me all the
while she spoke, and I even felt ten
times more than she could have suffered
by the gulph. 'My dearest Youwee,'
says I, ' why did not you tell me this
adventure sooner?'— 'It is too soon
'I fear now!' says she; for then
saw the colour forfake my lips, my
eyes grow languid, and myself drop-
ing into her arms. She screamed out,
and ran to the chest, where all was
empty; but turning every bottle up,
and from the remaining drops in each
collecting a small quantity of liquor,
and putting it by little and little to my
lips, and rubbing my wrists and tem-
pies, she brought me to myself again;
but I continued so extremely sick for
some days after, that it was above a
week before I could get down with my
cart to fetch up my chests.

When I was able to go down, You-
warkee would not venture me alone,
but went herself with me. We then
found two more of the chests, which
we landed; and I had work sufficient
for two or three days in getting them
all up to the grotto, they were so heavy,
and all the way through the wood be-
ing up hill.

We had five in hand, and watched
several.
several days for the sixth, when see-
ing nothing of it we gave it over for
lost: but one day, as I was going for
water, Youwarkee would go with me,
and urged our carrying the net, that
we might drag for some fish; accord-
ingly we did so; and now having taken
what we wanted, we went to the rill,
and punning in the head of the boat,
(as I usually did, for by that means I
could fill the vessel as I stood on board)
the first thing that appeared was my
sixth chest. Youwarkee spied it first,
and cried, pointing thereto, 'O, Pe-
ter, what we have long wished for,' and
almost defpaired of, is come at
last! let us meet and welcome it.' I
was pleased with the gaiety of her fan-
cy. I did as she desired; we got it in
to the boat, after merrily saluting it,
and so returned home. It took us up
several day's time in searching, forting,
and disposing our cargo, and drying the
chesels; for the goods themselves
were so far from being wetted or spoilt,
that even those in the last chest,
which had lain so long in the water,
had not taken the least moisture.

Youwarkee was quite alert at the
success of her packing, but left me to
ring her praises, which I did not fail
of doing more than once at unpack-
ing each chest, and could see her eyes
glow with delight to see she had so
pleased me.

She had been so curious as to exa-
mine almost every thing in the ship;
and as well of things I had described,
and she did know, as of what she did
not, brought me something for a sam-
pal; but, above all, had not forget
the blue stuff, for the moment she had seen
that she defined it to the use of herself
and children.

Chap. XXIII.

The Religion of the Author's Family.

Youwarkee and I having
fixed ourselves, by degrees, into
a settled rota of action, began to live
like Christians, having so great a quan-
ity of most sorts of necessaries about
us. But I say we lived like Chri-
tians on another account, for you must
not think, after what I have said be-
fore, that I and my family lived like
heathens: no, I will assure you, they
by degrees knew all I knew, and
that, with a little artificial improve-
ment, and a well-regulated disposition,
I hoped, and did not doubt, would
carry them all to Heaven. I would
many a time have given all my interest
in the ship's cargo for a Bible; and a
hundred times grieved that I was not
matter of a pocket-one, which I might
have carried every where about me. I
never imagined there was one aboard,
and if there were, and Youwarkee
should find it, I supposed it would be
in Portuguese, which I knew little
of; so it would be of small service to
me if I had it.

Since I am upon the topick of reli-
gion, it may not be amifs, once for all,
to give you a small sketch of my reli-
gious proceedings after coming into
my new dominions. I have already told
you that from my first stop at the rock
I had prayed constantly morning and
evening, but I cannot say I did it al-
ways with the fame efficacy. How-
ever, my imperfect devotions were not
without good effect; and I am con-
dent, wherever this course is pursued
with a right view, sooner or later the
issue will prove the fame to others as I
found it to myself; I mean, that mer-
cies will be remembered with more
gratitude, and evils be more disregar-
ded, and become less burdensome: and
surely the person whose cafe this is,
must necessarily enjoy the truft relish
of life. As daily prayer was my
practice, in answer to it I obtained
the greatest blessing and comfort my
solitude was capable of receiving; I
mean my wife, whose character I need
not farther attempt to blazon in any
faint colours of my own, after what
has been already said; her acts having
spoken her virtues beyond all verbal
description.

After we were married, as I call it,
that is, after we had agreed to become
man and wife, I frequently prayed be-
fore her, and with her, (for by this
time she understood a good deal of my
language;) at which, though contrary
to my expectation, she did not seem
surprized, but readily kneeled by and
joined with me. This I liked very
well: and upon my asking her one day
after prayer, if she understood what I
had been doing, (for I had a notion
she did not) 'Yes, verily,' says she,

"you"
you have been making petitions to
the image of the great Collwar.—
Pray," says I, (willing gently to lead
her into a just sense of a Supreme
Being) 'who is this Collwar? and
where does he dwell?' 'He it is,'
says she, 'that does all good and evil
to us.'— Right," says I, 'it is in
some measure tow; but he cannot of
himself do evil, absolutely and pro-
perly as his own act.'— 'Yes," says
she, 'he can; for he can do all that
can be done, and as evil can be done
he can do it.' So quick a reply
startled me. Thinks I, 'She will
run me a-ground presently; and from
being a doctor, as I fancied myself,
I shall become but a pupil to my own
scholar.' I then asked her where the
great Collwar dwelt; she told me, 'In
heaven, in a charming place.'— 'And
can he know what we do?' says I.
'Yes," replied she, 'his image tells
him every thing; and I have prayed
to his image, which I have often
seen; and it is filled with so much
virtue that it is his second self: for
there is only one of them in the
world who is so good, he gives sev-
eral virtues to other images of him-
sel, which are brought to him, and
put into his arms to breathe upon;
and the only thing I have ever re-
gretted since I knew you is, that I
have not one of them here to comfort
and blest us and our children.'

Though I was sorry for the oddity
of her conceptions, I was almost glad
to find her so ignorant, and pleased
myself with thinking that as she had
already a confused notion of a Su-
preme Power, I should soon have the
satisfaction of bringing her to a more
rational knowledge of him.

Pray, Youwee," says I, 'what is
your God made of?'— 'Why of
clay," says she, 'finely painted, and
looks so terrible he would make you
tremble to behold him.'— 'Do you
think," says I, 'that is the true
Collwar's real shape, if you could
see himself?' She told me, 'Yes,' for
that some of his best servants had
seen him, and took the representation
from himself. 'And pray, do you
think he loves his best servants, as
you call them, and is kind to them?'—
'You need not doubt it," says she.
'Why, then," replied I, 'how came
he to look so terrible upon them
when they saw him, as you say they
did? for I can see no reason how ter-
rible forever he looks to others, why
he should shew himself so to those he
loves. I should rather think, as
you say he is kind to them, that he
should have two images, a placid
one for his good, and a terrible one
for his bad servants; or else, who,
by seeing him can tell whether he is
pleased or angry? for even you your-
self, Youwee, when any thing pleases
you, have a different look from that
you have when you are angry; and
little Pedro can tell whether he does
well or ill by your countenance:
whereas, if you made no distinction,
but looked with the same face on all
his actions, he would as readily
think he did well as ill in committing
a bad action." Youwarkee could
not tell what to say to this, the fact
seeming against her.

I then asked her, if she thought the
image itself could hear her petitions.
She replied, 'Yes.'— 'And can he,'
says I, 'return you an answer?' She
told me, he only did that to his best
servants. 'Did you ever hear him do
to you?' says I. 'For unless he can
speak too, I should much suspect his
hearing; and you being one of his
best servants, seeing you love him,
and pray heartily to him, why should
you not hear him as soon as others?'—
'No," says she, 'there are a great
number of glumms on purpose to
serve him, pray for us to him, and
receive his answers.'— 'But to what
purpose then," says I, 'is your pray-
ing to him if their prayers will serve
your turn?'— 'O," says she, 'the
image hears them sooner than us,
and sends the petitions up to the
great Collwar, and lets him know
who makes them, and desires him to
let them have what they want.'—
'But suppose," says I, for argument
false, 'that you could see the great
Collwar, or know where he was,
and should pray to himself, without
going about to his image first, do
you think he could not hear you?'—
'I cannot tell that," says she. 'But
how then," says I, 'can he tell what
(if it could speak) his image says,
which is as far from him as you are.'
And, pray, do you think he can hear.

67
of course, as direct consequences of such his love and knowledge of us, and she easily came into them. Accordingly, I opened the doctrine of the creation to her as well as I could. I am sorry to say my explication of this great point was not so just, so particular, and clear, as it might have been if I had had a Bible, any more than was the succeeding history of our redemption; however, in general, I explained both so effectually, that though it required time to ground her in the full practical faith of it, yet the opinion she had of me, and my fidelity to her, with the reasons I was able to urge for what I taught her, persuaded her I was in the right, and disposed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous application, with God's grace, soon brought her to a firm belief in it, and a suitable temper and conduct with respect to God and man.

After I had began with my children, I frequently referred their farther instruction to their mother, for I have always experienced that a superficial knowledge, with a desire of becoming a teacher, is, in some measure, equivalent to better knowledge; for it not only excites every principle one has to the utmost, but makes matters more clear and conspicuous even to one's self.

By these means, and the Divine blessing thereon, in a few years, I may fairly say, I had a little Christian church in my own house, and in a flourishing way too, without a Schismatic or Heretic amongst us.

C H A P. XXIV.

THE AUTHOR'S ACCOUNT OF HIS CHILDREN — THEIR NAMES — THEY ARE EXERCISED IN FLYING — HIS BOAT CRAZY — YOU WARRICK INTENDS A VISIT TO HER FATHER, BUT FIRST TAKES ANOTHER FLIGHT TO THE SHIP — SENDS A BOAT AND CHESTS THROUGH THE GULPH — CLO ATHS HER CHILDREN — IS WITH CHILD AGAIN, SO HER VISIT IS PUT OFF — AN INVENTORY OF THE LAST FREIGHT OF GOODS — THE AUTHOR'S METHOD OF TREATING HIS CHILDREN.
PETER WILKINS.

DRÉN—YOUWARKEE, HER SON TOMMY, WITH HER DAUGHTERS PATTY AND HALLYCARNIE, SET OUT TO HER FATHER'S.

I had now lived here almost fourteen years; and besides the three sons before-mentioned, had three girls and one boy. Pedro, my eldest, had the grandee, but too small to be useful; my second son Tommy had it complete; so had my three daughters; but Jimmy and David, the youngest sons, none at all. My eldest daughter I named Patty, because I always called my first wife to; I say my first wife, though I had no other knowledge of her death than my dream; but am from that as verily persuaded if ever I reach England I shall find it so, as if I had heard it from her aunt's own mouth. My second daughter my wife desired might be called by her father's name Hallycarnie; and my youngest I named Sarah, after my mother. I put you to the trouble of writing down the names, for as I shall hereafter have frequent occasion to mention the children severally, it will be pleasant for myself and you to call them by their several names of distinction, than to call them my second son, or my eldest daughter, and fo-forth.

My wife now took great delight in exercising Tommy and Patty (who were big enough to be trusted) in flight, and would often skim round the whole island with them before I could walk half through the wood. And she would teach them also to swim or fail; I know not which to call it, for sometimes you should see them dart out of the air as if they would fall on their faces into the lake, when coming near the surface they would stretch their legs in an horizontal posture, and in an instant turn on their backs, and then you could see nothing from the bank, to all appearance, but a boatailing along, the grandee rising at their head, feet, and sides, so like the sides and ends of a boat, that you could not discern the face or any part of the body. I own I often envied them this exercice, which they seemed to perform with more ease than I could only shake my leg, or stir an arm.

Though we had perpetually Swangeans about us, and the voices as I used to call them, I could never once prevail on my wife to shew herself, or to claim any acquaintance with her country-folks. And what is very remarkable in my children is, that my three daughters and Tommy, who had the full grandee, had exactly their mother's height, Jimmy and David had just my height, and Pedro's height was between both, though he was never much affected with any light; but I was obliged to make spectacles for Tommy and all my daughters when they came to go abroad.

I had in this time twice enlarged my dwelling, which the increase of my family had rendered necessary. The last alteration I was enabled to do in a much better manner, and with more ease, than the first; for by the return of my flota, I had gotten a large collection of useful tools; several of iron, where the handles or wood-work preponderated the iron; but such were all, or greatest part of that metal had got either to the rock, or were so fast fixed to the head of the ship, that it was difficult to remove them; so that my wife could get comparatively few of this latter sort, though some she did. It was well, truly, I had these instruments, which greatly facilitated my labours, for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making provision for us all; and my sons Pedro and Tommy commonly assisted. I had also had another importation of goods through the gulph, which still added to my convenience. But my boat made me shudder every time I went into her; she had leaked again and again, and I had patched her till I could scarce see a bit of the old wood. She was of unapproachable to me, and yet I could not venture myself in her, but with the utmost apprehension and trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had such helps to build a new one, but had been diverted by one avocation or other.

About this time Youwarkee, who was now upwards of thirty-two years of age, the fondest mother living, and very proud of her children, had formed a project of taking a flight to Arm-drummintake, a town in the kingdom of Doorty Swangeant, as I called it, where her father, if living, was a colt under Georigetti, the prince of that country. She imparted her desire to
to me, asking my leave; and she told me, if I pleased, she would take Patty and Tommy along with her. I did not much dislike the proposal, because of the great inclination I had for a long time to a knowledge of, and familiarity with, her countrymen and relations; and now I had so many of her children with me, I could not think she would ever be prevailed on, but by force, to quit me and her offspring, and be contented to lose fix for the sake of having two with her; especially as she had shewed no more love for them than the rest: so I made no hesitation, but told her she should go.

I expected continually I should hear of her departure; but the saying no more of it, I thought she had dropped her design, and I did not chuse to mention it. But one day as we were at dinner, looking mighty seriously, she said, 'My dear, I have considered of the journey you have contented I should take, but in order thereto it is necessary that I prepare several things for the children, especially those who have no grandees, and I am resolved to finish them before I go, that we may appear with decency, both here and at Ardrummak; for I am sure my father, whose temper I am perfectly acquainted with, will, upon sight of me and my little ones, be so overjoyed, that he will forgive my absence and marriage, provided he sees reason to believe I have not matched unworthily, unbecoming my birth; and after keeping me and the children with him, it may be two or three months, will accompany me home again himself with a great retinue of servants and relations; or, at least, if he is either dead or unable for flight, my other relations will come or send a convey to take care of me and the children: and, my dear, as I shall give them all the encomiums I can of you, and of my situation with you, while I am among them, I would have them a little taken with the elegance of our domestick condition when they come hither, that they may think me happy in you and my children; for I would not only put my family into a condition to appear before them, but to surprize the old gentleman and his company, who never in their lives saw any part of mankind with another covering than the grandee.' When she had done, I expressed my approbation of her whole system, as altogether prudent; and she proceeded immediately to put it in execution. To work she went, opened every chest, and examined their contents. But while she was upon the hunt, and selecting such things as she thought fit for her purpose, she collected several articles she had observed in the ship, which she judged far more for her turn than any she had at home. Hereupon she prayed me to let her take another trip to the vessel, and to carry Tommy with her.

After so many trials, and such happy experience of her wife and fortunate conduct, I contented to her flight, and away went she and her son. Upon their return, which was in a few days, she told me what they had been doing, and said, as she so often heard me complain of the age of my boat, and fear to fail in her, she had fitted me out a little ship, and hoped it would in due time arrive safely. As she passed quickly on to other things, I never once thought of asking her what she meant by the little ship she spoke of; but must own, that, like a foolish fond parent, I was more intent on her telling me how Tommy had found a hoard of playthings, which he had packed up for his own use.

As to this last particular, I learned by the sequel of the story, when the spark, proud of his acquisition, came to me, that he had been peeping about in the cabin whilst his mother was packing the chests, and seeing a small brass knob in the wainscot, took it for a plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little door of a cupboard, where he had found some very pretty toys, that he positively claimed for himself; among which were a small plain gold ring, and a very fine one set with diamonds, which he showed me upon two of his fingers. I wondered how the child, who had never before seen such things, or the use of them, should happen to apply these so properly; but he told me in playing with this, meaning the diamond ring about his fingers, it flipped over his middle finger joint, and he could not get it off again, so he put the other upon another finger to keep it company.

We watched daily, as usual on such occasions,

"Peter Wilkins."
occasions, for the arrival of our fleet. It was surprizing that none of the chefs which Youwarkee shot down the gulph were ever half so long in their passage as I was myself, but some came in a week, some in a few days more, and even some in days; which I attributed to their following directly the course of the water, shooting from shelf to shelf as the tide fat; and I believe my keeping the boat I failed in so strictly and constantly in the middle of the stream, was the reason of my being detained there so long. In less than a fortnight every thing came safe but one chef, which, as we never heard of it, I suppose was either sunk or bulged.

Being one day upon shore, watching to see if anything more was come through the cavern, I spied at a distance somewhat looking very black and very long, and by the colour and shape thereof I took it for a young whale. Having observed it some time making very little way, I took my old boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, left a stroke with it's tail (which I then fancied I saw move) might endanger my boat and myself too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and seeing it did not stir, I believed it to be dead; whenupon, taking courage, I drew it close, that at length I plainly perceived it was the ship's second boat turned upside-down. It is not easy to express the joy I felt on this discovery. It was the very thing I was now, as I have said, in the greatest want of. I presently laid hold of it and brought it ashore; and it was no small pleasure to find, on examining, that though it had lain so long dry, it was yet quite sound, and all it's chinks filled up in it's passage; and it proved to me afterwards the most beneficial thing I could have had from the flib.

I got all my goods home from the lake to my grotto, by means of the cart, as usual. My wife and daughters waited with impatience for me to unpack, that they might take possession of such things as would be needful for rigging out the family against the supposed reception of the old glumm, and had set all the chefs in the order they desired they might be opened in. But Tommy running to me, with a 'Pray, daddy, open my chef.' - 'First pray, give me my play-things.' - 'First!' it was, to satisfy him, concluded in favour of his demand. So, he pointing to the chest which he regarded as his property, I opened it whist his eyes were ready to pierce through it, till I came to his treasure. 'There, ' there they are, daddy!' says he, as soon as I had uncovered them. And indeed, when I saw them I could not but much commend the child for his fancy; for the first things that appeared were a silver punch or wine-cann and a ladle, then a gold watch, a pair of scissors, a small silver chafing-dish and lamp, a large case of mathematical instruments, a flagellet, a terrella, or globular load-stone, a small globe, a dozen of large silver spoons, and a small case of knives and forks and spoons; in short, there was, I believe, the greatest part of the Portuguese captain's valuable effects.

These Tommy claiming as his own proper chattels, I could not help interposing somewha of my authority in the affair. 'Hold, hold, son!' says I, 'these things are all mine; but as I have several of you who will all be equally pleased with them, though, as the first finder, you may be entitled to the best share, you are not to grasp the whole, you must all have something like an equality; and as to some things which may be equally useful to us all, you must be set up to be used upon occasion, and are to be considered as mine and your mother's property.' Thereupon gave each of them a large silver spoon, and with a fork I scratched the initials of their names respectively on them, and divided several of the trifles amongst them equally. 'And now, Tommy,' says I, 'you for your pains shall have this more than the rest,' offering him the flagellet. Tommy looked very gloomy, and though he durst not find fault, his dissatisfaction was very visible by coolly taking it, tossing it down, and walking gravely off. 'I thought,' says I, 'Tommy, I had made a good choice for you; but, as I find you despise it—here Pedro, do you take that pretty thing, since your brother flights it.' Tommy replied, (speaking but half out, and a little surly, more than I ever observed before) 'Let him take it if he will, I can get bits of flicks enough in the wood.'

My method had always been to avoid either beating or scolding at my children,
dren, for preferring their own opinion to mine; but I ever let things turn about so, that from their own reason they should perceive they had erred in opposing my sentiments; by which means they grew so habituated to submit to my advice and direction, that for the most part my will was no sooner known to them than it became their own choice; but then I never willed according to fancy only, but with judgment, to the best of my skill.

Tommy, therefore, (as I said before) having shewn a disapprobation of my doings; to convince him of his mistake, I took the flagellet from Pedro, and now, Pedro, says I, let me teach you how to manage this piece of wood, as Tommy calls it, and then let me see if in all the grove he can cut such another. On this I clapped it to my mouth, and immediately played several country-dances and horn-pipes on it; for though my mother had scarce taught me to read, I had learnt mufick and dancing, being, as she called them, gentleman-like accomplishments. My wife and children, especially Tommy, all stared as if they were wild, first on me, then on one another, whilst I played a country-dance; but I had no sooner struck up an hornpipe, than their feet, arms, and heads, had so many twitchings and convulsive motions, that not one quiet limb was to be seen amongst them; till having exercised their members as long as I saw fit, I almost laid them all to sleep with Chevy Chace, and so gave over.

They no sooner found themselves free from this enchantment, than the children all huddled round me in a cluster, all speaking together, and reaching out their little hands to the instrument. I gave it Pedro. There, says I to him, take this slighted favour as no such contemptible present.

Poor Tommy, who had all this while looked very ample, burst into a flood of tears at my last words, as if his heart would have broke; and running to me, fell on his knees, and begged my pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and kissing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more children to give any thing to which either of the rest despised, it was equal to me who had it, so it was thankfully received. I found that did not satisfy; still in tears, he said, might he not have the stick again, as I gave it to him first. Tommy, says I, you know I gave it to you first, but you disapproving my kindness, I have now given it Pedro, who, should I again stop his will take it from him, would have that reason to complain which you have not, who parted with it by your own consent; and therefore, Tommy, as I am determined to acquaint you as near as I can with the strict rules of justice, there must no more be said to me of this matter. Such as this was my constant practice amongst them; and they having always found me inflexible from this rule, we seldom had any long debates.

Though I say the affair ended so with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not so with Tommy; for though he knew he had no hopes of moving me, he set all his engines at work to recover his stick (as he called it) by his mother's and sister's interest. These solicited Pedro very strongly to gratify him. At length Pedro (he being a boy of a most humane disposition) granted their desire, if I would give leave; and I having signified, that the cause being now out of my hands, he might do as he pleased, he generously yielded it. And indeed he could not have bestowed it more properly; for Tommy had the best ear for mufick I ever knew; and in less than a twelve-month could far outdo me, his instructor, in softness and easiness of finger; and was also master of every tune I knew, which were neither inconsiderable in number, nor of the lowest rate.

Yonwarkee, with her daughters, fat close to work, and had but just completed her whole design for the family cloathing when she told me she found herself with child again. As that circumstance ill-suited a journey, she deferred her flight for about fifteen months; in which time she was brought to bed, and weaned the infant, which was a boy, whom I named Richard, after my good master at the academy. The little knave thrived amain, and was left to my farther nursing during
it's mammy's absence; who, still firm to her resolution, after she had equipped herself and companions with whatever was necessary to their travelling, and locked up all the apparel she had made till her return, because she would have it appear new when her father came, set out with her son Tommy and my two daughters Patty and Hollycarrie; the last of which by this time being big enough also to be trusted with her mother.

C H A P. XXV.

YOUWARKEE'S ACCOUNT OF THE STAGES TO ARNDRUMNSTAKE—THE AUTHOR UNEASY AT HER FLIGHT—HIS EMPLOYMENT IN HER ABSENCE, AND PREPARATIONS FOR RECEIVING HER FATHER—HOW HE SPENT THE EVENINGS WITH THE CHILDREN.

My wife was now upon her journey to her father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impossible for me to conceive by her description of the way; for the distinguished it not by miles or leagues, but by swangeans, and names of rocks, seas and mountains, which I could neither comprehend the distance of from each other, nor from Graundevolet where I was. I understood by her, indeed, there was a great sea to be passed, which would take her up almost a day and night, having the children with her, before she reached the next arkoee; though she could do it herself she said, and strain hard, in a summer's night; but if the children should flag by the way, as there was no resting-place between us and Battringdrigg, the next arkoee, it might be dangerous to them; so she would take the above time for their sakes. After this I found by what she said there was a narrow sea to pass, and a prodigious mountain, before she reached her own country; and that her father's was but a little beyond that mountain. This was all I could know in general about it. At their departure she and the children had taken each a small provision for their flight, which hung about their necks in a sort of purse.

I cannot say, notwithstanding this journey was taken with my concurrence and consent, that I was perfectly easy when they were gone; for my affection for them all would work up imaginary fears too potent for my reason to dispel, and which at first, fat with no easy preface upon my mind. This my pretty babies at home receiving, used all the little winning arts they could to divert and keep up my spirits; and from day to day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with and amusing them at home, I grew more and more persuaded that all would go right with the absent, and that in due time I should see them return again.

But as the winter set in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourselves within doors in preparing several things which might not only be useful and ornamental, if the old glumm should come to see us, but might also divert us, and make the time pass less tediously. The first thing I went upon was a table, which, as my family consisted of so many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that view I broke up a couple of chests; and, taking the two sides of one of them, I nailed them edge to edge by strong thick pieces underneath at each end and in the middle; then I took two chest-lids with their hinges, nailing one to each side of my middle piece, which made two good flaps; after this, with my tools, of which I had now a chest-full, I chopped out of new stuff and planed four strong legs quite square, and nailed them strongly to each corner of my middle board; I then nailed pieces from one leg to the other, and nailed the bed likewise to them; then I fastened a border quite round within six inches from the bottom, from foot to foot, which held all fast together. When all this was done, still my table was imperfect, I could not put up the flaps, having no proper support. To remedy this I sawed out a broad flap from a chest-side, and boring a large hole through the center, I spiked it up to the under-side of the table's bed, with a spindle I contrived just loose enough to play round the head of the spike, filing down that part of the spindle which passed through the bed of the table, and riveting it close; so that when...
when my flaps were set up, I pulled the flip crofswife of the table, and when the flaps were down, the flip turned under the top of the table lengthwise; next, under each flap, I nailed a small flip lengthwise of the flaps, to raise them on a level, when up, with the top of the table. When I had thus compleated the several parts of this needful utensil, I spent some time and pains, by fcraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the success so well answered my wish, that I was not a little proud of the performance: and what rendered my work thereon a flill more agreeable task, was my pretty infants company, who stood by, ex- pressed their wonder and approbation at every stroke.

Now I had gotten a table, I wanted chairs to it; for as yet we had only fat round the room upon chefts, which formed a bench of the whole circum- ference, they flood fo thick. There was no moving of them without a monftrous trouble every time I might have occasion to fet out my table; be- sides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for seats; fo I resolved to make some chairs and foools alfo, that might be manage- able. I will not trouble you with the steps I took in the formation of these; only, in general, you muft know, that some more chefts I broke up to that purpofe ferved me for timber, out of which I framed fix fizable handfome chairs, and a competent number of foools.

But now that I was turned joiner I had another convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to inclofe things, and preferve them from dust, except the chefts; and they were quite unfit for holding liquors, viuctuals, and fuch-like matters, in open fhefts, as moft of my veffels were. Where- fore, having feveral boards now re- maining of the boxes I had broken up for chairs and foools, I thought me of fupplying this great deficiency; fo of thefe fpare boards, in a work- manlike way, (for by this time I was become a tolerable mechanick.) I com- posed a very tight clofet, holding half a dozen broad fhefts, shut up by a good pair of doors, with a lock and key to fatten them.

These jobs took me up almost three months, and I thought I had not em- ployed them idly, but for the credit and service of my family. I was now again at leifure for farther projects. I was uncertain as to my wife's return, how fon the might be with me, or how much longer the might stay; but I was fure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful than in- creating, by all means in my power, the accommodations of my houfe; for the more polite as well as convenient reception of her father, or any else who might accompany her home in the way of a retinue, as the talked of. I saw plainly I had not room for lodg- ing them, and that was a circumstance of main importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long apartment to one of my outer- rooms, to range againft the fide of the rock; but reflecting that fuch a thing would be quite ufelefs, unlefs I could finifh it in time, fo as to be compleat when my guests came, and not know- ing how fon that might be, I resolved to quit this design; and I fell upon another which might do as well, and required much lefs labour and fewer days to perfect.

I remembered, that amongst those things my wife had packed up on board the ship, and which came home through the gulph, there were two of the largest fails, and a couple of fmalier fize. Thefe I carried to the wood, and tried them in feveral places to fee where they might be difpofed to moft advantage in the nature of a tent; and having found a convenient spot to my pur- pofe, I cut divers poles for supportors, and making training-lines of my mate- weed, I pitched a noble one, fufficient to cover or entertain a numerous com- pany, and fo tight every where as to keep out the weather. The front of this new apartment I hung with blue cloth, which had a very genteel effeet. I had almoft forgotten to tell you that I contrived (by hanging one of the fmalier fails acrofs, juft in the middle, which I could let down or raife up at pleafure) to divide the tent occasion- ally into two diffinft rooms.

When I had proceeded thus far, there were ftil wanting seats for this ad- ditional building, as I may call it; and though I could fpare some chefts to fit on, I found they would not half do. M. For
I frequently observed, that when we had begun upon Cornwall, and traversed the mines, the sea-coast, or talked of the fine gentlemen’s seats, and such things, one would start up, and, if the discourse flagged ever so little, would cry, ‘Aye, but daddy, what did you do when the crocodile came after you out of the water?’ And another, before that subject was half-ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they started) would be impatient for the story of the lion; and I always took notice that the part each had made the most reflections on, was always most acceptable to the same person: but poor Sally would never let the conversation drop without some account of the muletto, it was such a pretty, gentle creature, she said.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE AUTHOR’S CONCERN AT YOWWARKEE’S STAY—REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION—HEARS A VOICE CALL HIM—YOWWARKEE’S BROTHER QUANGROLLART VISITS HIM WITH A COMPANION—HE TREATS THEM AT THE GROTTO—THE BROTHER DISCOVERS HIMSELF BY ACCIDENT—WILKINS PRODUCES HIS CHILDREN TO HIM.

My head, as well as my hands, had now been employed for five months in adjusting all things in the most suitable manner for the reception of Youwarkee and her friends; but nobody coming, and light days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneasy, and had formed divers imaginations of what might occasion her stay. Thought I, ‘I am afraid all the pains I have been taking will be to no purpose; for either her father will not let her return, or she has of herself come to such a resolution: for the knows I cannot follow her, and had rather, perhaps, live and enjoy the three children she has with her, amidst a number of her friends and acquaintance, than spend the remainder of her days with me and all our offspring in this solitude.’

But then I reflected she chose it herself, or at least declared herself perfectly satisfied, yea, delighted therewith!—

‘And here are her children with me, the major

For a supplement, then, I took my axe, and felled a couple of great trees, one from each side of the tent, sawed off the tops, and cut each of the trunks in two about the middle: these huge cylinders I rolled into the tent with a good deal of toil and difficulty; two of them I thrust into the inner division, and left two in the outer; I placed them as benches on both sides; then, with infinite pains, I shaved the upper face of each smooth and flat, and pared off all the little knots and roughnesses of the front; so that they were fitted to fit on, and their own weight fixed them in the place where I intended them to be. At the upper end of the farther chamber I let three chests lengthwise for seats, or any other use I might see fit to put them to.

During these operations we were all hard at it, and no hand idle but Dicky in arms, and Sally, whom he kept in full employ; but Pedro, being a sturdy lad, could drive a nail, and lift or carry the things I wanted; and Jimmy and David, though to young, could pick up the chips, hold a nail, or the lamp, or be some way or other useful: for I always preached to them the necessity of earning their bread before they eat it; and not think to live on mine and their brother’s labour.

The nights being pretty long, after work was over, and Sarah had fed her brother and laid him in his hammock, we used to sit all down to enjoy ourselves at a good meal; for we were never regular at that till night; and then, after supper, my wife being absent, one or other of the young ones would begin with something they had before heard me speak of; by saying, ‘Daddy, how did you use to do this or that in England?’ Then all ears were immediately open to catch my answer, which certainly brought on something else done either there or elsewhere; and by their little questions and my answers they would sometimes draw me into a story of three hours long, till, perhaps, two out of three of my audience were falling asleep, and then we all went to bed.

I verily believe my children would, almost any of them, from the frequent repetition of these stories, have given a sufficient account of England to have gained a belief from almost any Englishman of their being natives there.
major part of them: yet, what can I think? since her return is put off till the swangans are over at this arke, she will never bring her relations now in this unreasonable time for flight: therefore I must think, if the intended to return at all, it would have been beforehand: and as the cafe is not so, my fear of losing her entirely prevails greatly.—O! says I, that we had but a post here as we have in England; there we can communicate our thoughts at a distance to each other without any trouble, and for little charge! What a country is this to live in! and what an improper creature am I to live in it! Had I but the grandeur, I would have found her out by this time, by the where she would; but, whilst every one about me can pass, repas, and as they please, I am fixed here like one of my trees, bound to the spot, or, upon removal, to die in the attempt. Alas! why did I beget children here, but to make them as wretched and incomparably as myself! Some of them are formed, indeed, as to shift for themselves; but they owe it to their mother, not to me. What I am I a father of children who will be bound one day to curse me!—Severe reflection!—Yet I never thought of this till now. But am I the only father in such a cafe? No, surely! for am not I as much bound to curse my father as my children are to curse me? He might have left me happy if he would; I would them if I could. Again, are there not others who, by improper junction with persons diseased in body, or vicious in mind, have entailed greater misery upon their posterity than I have on mine? My children are all healthy, strong, and sound, both in body and mind; and is not that the greatest blessing that can be bestowed on our beings? But they are imprisoned in this arke!—What then!—With industry, here is no want; and as they increase they may settle in communities, and be helpful to each other. I have lived well here nigh sixteen years, and it was God's pleasure I should be here; and can I think I was placed here with an injunction contrary to the great command, "Increase and multiply?" If that were so, can it be possible I should have received the only means of propagating, as it were from Heaven itself? No, it was certainly as much my Maker's will that I should have posterity here as that I myself should at first be brought hither. This is a large and plentiful spot, and capable of great improvement, when there shall be hands sufficient. How many petty states are less than these my dominions! I have here a compas of near twenty miles round, and how many thousands grow voluntarily grey in a far less circuit!

I had hardly finished my reflections (for I was sitting by myself in my tent upon one of the trees I had turned into benches) when I heard a musical voice call—"Peter! Peter!" I started. "What's this?" says I, "It is not Your wakker's voice! What can this mean!" Listening, I heard it again, but at so great a distance I could but just perceive the sound. "Be it where it will," says I, "I will face it!" Thus speaking, I went out of the tent, and heartened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then ran for my gun, and walked through the wood as fast as I could to the plain; but still I neither saw nor heard anything. I was then in hopes of seeing somebody on the lake, but no one appeared; for I was fully determined to make myself known to whomsoever I should meet; and, if possible, to gain some intelligence of my wife. But after so much fruitless pains, my hopes being at an end, I was returning, when I heard 'Peter! Peter!' again, at a great distance, the sound coming from a different quarter than at first. Upon this I stopped, and heard it repeated; and it was as if the speaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I stepped out of the wood, (for I had just re-entered it upon my return home) when I saw two persons upon the swangane just over my head. I cried out, 'Who's that? And they immediately called again, 'Peter! Peter!'—"Ors elam gee," says I; that is, 'Here am I.' On this they direilly took a small sweep round, (for they had overshot me before they heard me) and alighted just by me: when I perceived them to be my wife's countrymen, being dressed like her, with only broader chaplets about their heads, as she had told me the gummers all wore. After a short obeisance,
obedience, they asked me if I was the
PETER WILKINS.
gumm Peter, barkatt to Youwarkee.
I answered, I was. They then told me
they came with a message from Pendle-
hamby, columb of Arndrumstaffe,
my goppa, and from Youwarkee, his
dughter. I was vastly rejoiced to see
them, and to hear only the name of
my wife. But though I longed to
know their message, I trembled to
think of their mentioning it, as one
of them was just going to do, for fear
of hearing some things very displeas-
ing; so I begged them to go through
the wood with me to the grotto, where
we should have more leisure and con-
venience for talk, and where, at the
same time, they might take some re-
freshment. But though I had thus
put off their message, I could not for-
bear enquiring by the way after the
health of my goppo and my wife and
children, how they got to Arndrum-
staffe, and how they found their rela-
tions and friends. They told me all
were well; and that Youwarkee, as she
did on me, defir'd I would think on
her with true affection. I found this
was the phrase of the country. As
for the reft, I hoped it would turn
out well at last, though I dreaded to
hear it.

Being arrived at the grotto, I de-

dired my guests to sit down, and take
such refreshment as I could prepare
them. When they were seated, I went
to work in order to provide them a re-
past. Seeing my fire piled up very
high, and burning fierce, and the chil-
dren about it, they wondered where
they were got, and who they had come
to, and turned their faces from it;
but I setting some chairs, so that the
light might not strike on their eyes,
they liked the warmth well enough;
though, I remarked, the light did not
affect them so much as it had done
Youwarkee.

Whilst I was cooking, the poor chil-
dren got all up in a corner, and feared
at the strangers, not being able to con-
ceive where they came from; and by
degrees crept all backwards into the
bed-chamber, and hid themselves; for
they had never before seen any body
but my own family.

I observed that one of my guests
paid more than ordinary respect to the
other; and though their grandees
made no distinction between them, yet
there was something, I thought, much
more noble in the address and beha-
viour of the latter; and taking notice
that he was also the chief spokesman,
I judged it proper to pay my respects
to him in a somewhat more diffident-
manner, though so as not to offend
the other if I should happen to be
mistaoken.

I first presented a can of my Madeira,
and took care, as if by accident, to
give it to Mr. Uppermoff, as I thought
him, who drank half of it, and would
have given the remainder to his com-
panion; but I begged him to drink it
all up, and his friend should be served
with some presently: he did so, and
thanked me by lifting his hand to his
chin. I then gave the other a can of
the same liquor, which he drank, and
returned thanks as his companion had
before. I then took a can myself, and
telling them I begged leave to use the
ceremony of my own country to them,
I drank, wishing their own health,
and that of all relations at Arndrum-
staffe. He that I took for the superior
fell a laughing heartily: "Ha, ha, ha!"
says he, "this is the very way my sister
does every day at Arndrumstaffe."—
"Your sister, Sir!" says I. "Pray, has
she ever been in Europe or in Eng-
land?"—"Well!" says he, "I have
plainer discovered myself, which I did
not intend to do yet; but, truly, bro-
ther Peter, I mean none other than
your own wife Youwarkee."

The moment I knew who he was, I
rove up, and taking him by the right-
hand, lifted it to my lips and kissed it.
He likewise immediately stood up, and
we embraced each other with great
tendernefs. I then begged him, as I
had so worthy and near a relation of
my wife's with me, that he would not
delay the happiness I hoped for, in a
narrative from his mouth, how it fared
with my father, wife, and children,
and all their kinsfolks and friends,
whom I had so often heard mentioned
by my dearest Youwarkee, and so ear-
nestly desired to fee.

My brother Quangrollart (for that
he told me was his name) was prepar-
ing to gratify my impatience; but fee-
ing I had fet the entertainment on the
table, which confifted chiefly of bread,
several sorts of pickles and preserves,
with some cold salted fhir, he faid that
eating would but interrupt the thread
of his discourse; and therefore, with my leave, he would defer the relating
of what I desired for a little while; which we all thinking most proper, I
desired him and his friend (who might be another brother for aught I knew)
to refresh themselves with the poor modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilst my brother Quangrollart was
looking upon and handling his plate, being what he had never before seen,
his friend put the knife and fork upon the plate; telling him I believed
he was not acquainted with the use of
that instrument, which was one of my
own implements; and that the de-
sign of it, which was called a knife,
and of that other, (pointing to it)
called a fork, was the one to reduce
the food into pieces proper for chewing,
and the other to convey it to the mouth
without daubing the fingers, which
must happen in handling the food it-
sclf: and I then thwarted him what use
I put them to, by helping each of them
therewith to somewhat, and by cutting
a piece for myself, and putting it to
my mouth with the fork.

They both smiled, and looked very
well pleased; and then I told them that
the plate was the only thing that need
be daubed, and when that was taken
away, the table remained clean. So,
after I had helped each of them for
the first time, I desired them to help
themselves where they liked best; and,
to say the truth, they did so more
dextrously than I could have expected.

During our repast, we had frequent
sketches of the observations they made
in their flight, and of the places where
they had rested; and I could plainly
see that neither of them had ever been
at this house before, by hinting that
if they had not taken such a course
they had missed me.

I took particular notice which part
of my entertainment they eat most of,
that I might bring a fresh supply of
that when wanted; and I found, that
though they eat heartily of my bread
and preserves, and tasted almost of
every thing else, they never once
touched the fish; which put me upon
deferring I might help them to some.

At this they looked upon each other,
which I readily knew the meaning of,
and excused themselves, expressing
great satisfaction in what they had al-
ready gotten. I took however a piece
of fish on my own plate, and eating
very heartily thereof, my brother de-
sired me to give him a bit of it; I did
so, taking care to cut it as free from
bones as I could, and for greater se-
curity cautioning him, in case there
should be any, to pick them out, and
not swallow them. He had no sooner
put a piece in his mouth, but, 'Rofig,'
says he to his friend, 'this is padi.'

I thought indeed I had puzzled my
brother when I gave him the fish, but
by what he said of it, he puzzled me;
for I knew not what he meant by
padi, my wife having told me they
had no fish; or else I should have
taken that word for their name of it.
However, I cut Rofig a slice; and he
agreed it was padi, they both eat
heartily of it.

While we were at dinner, my bro-
ther told me he thought he saw some
of my children just now; for his sister
had informed him she had five more
at home; and he asked me why they
did not appear, and eat with us. I ex-
cused their coming, as fearing they
would only be troublesome; and said,
when we had done they should have
some viands. But he would not be
put off, and entreated me to admit
them. So I called them by their names,
and they came, all but Dicky, who was asleep in his hammock. I
told them, that the gentleman, pointing
to Quangrollart, was their uncle, their
mamma's brother, and ordered them
to pay their obeisance to him, which
they severally did. I then made them
dine Rofig. This last would have
had them sit down at table; but I pos-
itively forbade that; and giving
each of them a little of what we had
before us, they carried it to the chests,
and eat it there.

When we had done, the children
helped me to clear the table, and were
retiring out of the room; but then I
recalled them, and desired their uncle
to excuse their stay; for as he had pro-
mised me news of their mamma and
her family, it would be the height of
pleasure to them to hear him. He
seemed very much pleased with this
motion, desiring by all means they
might be present while he told his
story. Whereupon I ordered them to
the chefs again, while Quangrollart
delivered his narrative.

C H A P. XXVII.

QUANGROLLART'S ACCOUNT OF
YOUWARKEE'S JOURNEY, AND
RECEPTION AT HER FATHER'S.

HAVING set on the table some
brandy and Madeira, and each of
us taken one glass of both, I shewed,
by the attentiveness of my aspect
and posture, how defirous I was he
should proceed to what he had pro-
mised. Observing this, he went on
in the following manner. 'Brother
Peter,' says he, 'my sister You-
warkee, as I don't doubt you will
be glad to hear of her first, arrived
very late at Arndrumstake, the
third day after she left you, and
after a very severe flight to the dear
little Hallycarrie, who was a full
day and a night on her grandee; and
at last would not have been able to
have reached Battrindrigg but for
my sister's assistance, who, taking
her sometimes on her back for a
short flight, by those little refresh-
ments enabled her to perform it;
but from Battrindrigg, after some
hours rest, they came with pleasure
to the White Mountains, from
whence, after a small stay, they ar-
rived at Arndrumstake.

They alighted at our couvet, but
were opposed at their entrance by the
guards, to whom they did not chuse
to disclose themselves, till notice
was given to my father; who, upon
hearing that some strangers defied
admittance to him, sent me to in-
troduce them, if they were proper
for his presence, or else give orders
for such other reception as was suita-
ble to them.

When I came to the guard, I
found three gawreys and a glum-
bofs, whose appearance and beha-
vour, I must own, prejudiced me
very much in their favour. I then
asked from whence they came, and
their business with the colamb.
Youwarkee told me they came not
about business of public concern, re-
lating to the colamb's office, but out
of a dutiful regard, to
kiss his knees. "My father," said
I, "shall know it immediately; but
first, pray inform me of your name?"
"Your father!" replied Youwarkee,
"are you my brother Quangrollart?"
"My name is so," says I, "but I have
only one sister, now with my father,
and how I can be your brother, I
am not able to guess."—"Have
you never had another sister?" says
she. "Yes," says I, "but she is
long since dead; her name was
Youwarkee." At my mentioning
her name she fell upon my neck in
tears, crying, "My dear brother, I
am that dear sister Youwarkee, and
these with me are some of my chil-
dren, for I have five more; but
pray how does my father and sister?"

I started back at this declaration, to
view her and the children, seeing
it was some gross imposition, not in
the least knowing or remembering
any thing of her face, after so long
an absence; but I desired them to
walk in, till I told my father.

The guard, observing the several
passages between us, were amazed
to think who it could be had so fa-
miliarly embraced me; especially as
they plainly saw I only played a
passive part in it.

When I went in, I did not think
proper direcdy to inform my father
what had happened; but calling my
sister Hallycarrie, I let her into the
circumstances of this odd affair, and
defared her advice to do: "For,
says I, "surely this must be some
impostor; and as my father has
sacred subdue his sorrow for my
sister's loss, if this gawrey should
prove a deceiver, it will only revive
his affliction, and may prove at this
time extremely dangerous to him:
therefore let's consider what had
beft be done in the matter."

Hallycarrie, who had attentively
weighed all I said, seemed to think
it was some cheat, as well as I did;
for we could neither of us conceive
that any thing but death, or being fli,
could have kept Youwarkee so long
from the knowledge of her relations;
and that neither of them could be
the cafe was plain, if the person at-
tending was Youwarkee. "Besides,
"brother,"
"brother," says Hallycarnie, "the
"cannot surely be so much altered in
"fifteen years, but you must have
"known her: and yet, now I think,
"it is possible, you being so much
"younger, may have forgotten her; but
"whilst we have been talking of her,
"I have so well recollected her, that
"I think I could hardly be imposed
"upon by any deceiver.

"I then desired her to go with me
to the strangars, and see if she could
make any discovery. She did so,
and had no sooner entered the abb,
but Youwarkee called out, "My
dear sister Hallycarnie!" and she as
readily recollecting Youwarkee, they
in transport embraced each other;
and then your wife presenting to us
her three children, it proved the ten-
derest scene, except the following, I
ever saw.

"My father having kept his cham-
ber some time with a fever, and
though he was pretty well recovered,
having not yet been out of it, we
consulted how we might introduce
our sister and her children to him;
with as little surprize as might be,
for fear of a relapse by too great a
hurry of his spirits. At length we
concluded, I should go tell him
that some strangers had arrived, de-
siring to see him; but, on inquiry,
finding their business was too trifling
to trouble him upon, I had dispatch-
ed them: I was then to say, how
like one of them was to my sister
Youwarkee; and whilst I was
speaking, Hallycarnie was to enter,
and keep up the discourse, till we
should find a proper opportunity of
discovery. I went in, therefore, as
had been agreed; and, upon men-
tioning the name of Youwarkee, my
father fetched a deep sigh, and
turned away from me in tears. At
that instant Hallycarnie came in as
by accident; "Sir," says she,
"what makes you so sad? are you
worse to-day?" "O!" says he, "I
have heard a name that will never
be out of my heart, till I am in
hoximo." "What, I suppose my
sister?" "'Tis true," replied he,
"the fame." Says she, "I fancied
so; for I have just seen a stranger
as like her as two doors could be,
and would have sworn it was she, if
that had been possible. I thought
"my brother had been so imprudent
"as to mention her to you; and I
"think he did not do well to rip up
"an old sore he knew was almost
"healed, and make it break out a-
"fireth." "Ah! no, child," says
"my father, "that sore never has,
"nor can be healed. O Great Image!
"why can't I by some means or other
"he ascertained what end she came
to?"

"Sir," says my sister, "I think you
"are much to blame for these exclama-
tions, after so long absence: for,
"if she be dead, what use are they of?
"and if she be not, all may be well,
"and you may still see her again."—
"O never, never!" says my father;
"but could I be sure she was alive, I
"would take a swanage, and never
close my granude, till I found her,
"or drop dead in the search."—"And
"suppose you could meet with her,
"Sir," says I, "the very sight would
"overcome you, and be dangerous."—
"No, believe me, boy," says he, "I
"should then be fully easy and com-
"posed; and were she to come in this
"moment, I should suffer no surprize;
"but pleasure."—"No surprize,
"Sir?" says I. "Not if she were alive
"and well," says he. "Then, Sir,"
"says Hallycarnie, "will you excuse
"me if I introduce her?" and went
"out directly without staying for an
answer.

"When she was gone, "Quangrol-
lart," says my father, "clearly,
"what is the meaning of yours and
"your sister's playing thus upon my
"weakness? It is what I can upon no
"account forgive. It looks as if you
"were weary of me, and wanted to
"break my heart. To what purpose
"is all this prelude of yours, to in-
troduce to me somebody who, by
"her likeness to my daughter, may
"expose me to your foecir and raillery?
"This is a disobedience I never ex-
pected from either of you."

"The Great Image attend me!"
"says I, "Sir, you have much mistaken
"me; but I will not leave you in
doubt, even till Hallycarnie's re-
turn, you shall see Youwarkee with
"her; for all our discourse, I'll affure
"you, has but been concerted to pre-
pare you for her reception, with
"three of her children."—"And am
"I then," says he, in a transport,
"still to be blessed?"—"You are,
Sir," says I; "affure yourself you
are." By this time we heard them com-
ing; but my poor father had not
power to go to meet them: and upon
Youwarkee's nearer approach, to
fall at his knees, his limbs failing
him, he funk, and without speak-
ing a word, fell backwards on a
couch, which stood behind him;
and being quite motionless, we con-
cluded him to be storne-dead. On
this the women became entirely help-
less, screaming only, and wringing
their hands in extravagant postures.
But I, having a little more presen
cer of mind, called for the callantor;
who, by holding his nose, pinching
his feet, and other applications, in a
little time brought him to his fences
again.
"You may more easily conceive than
I describe, both the confusion we
were all in during my father's dis-
order, and the congratulations upon
his recovery; so, as I can give you
but a defective account of these, I
shall pass them by, and come to our
more serious discourse, after my fa-
ther and your wife had, without
speaking a word, wept themselves
quite dry on each other's necks.
My father then looking upon the
three children, (who were also cry-
ing to see their mammy cry) "And
who are these?" says he. "These,
Sir," says Youwarkee, "are three
of eight of your grand-children.
"And where is your barkatt?" says
he. "At home with the reft, Sir,"
replied he, "who are some of them
too small to come fo far yet: but
Sir," says he, "pray excuse my
answerin you any more quetions,
till you are a little recovered from
the commotion I perceive my pre-
fence has brought upon your spirits;
and as reft, the callantor says, will
be exceedingly proper, I will retire
with my fitter till you are better able
to hear company." My father was
with much difficulty prevailed with
to part with her out of his fight; but
the callantor preffing it, we were all
dismiffed, and he laid down to reft.
My brother would have gone on,
but I told him, as it grew near time
for repofe, and he and Robf must needs
he-fatigued with fo long a flight, if
they pleased, (as I had already heard
the moft valuable part of all he could
fay, in that my father had received
my wife and children fo kindly, and
that he left them all well) we would
defer his farther relation till the next
day: which they both agreeing to, I
laid them in my own bed, myself sleep-
ing in a spare hammock.

C H A P. XXVIII.

A DISCOURSE ON LIGHT—QUAN-
GROLLART EXPLAINS THE WORD
CRASHEE—BELIEVES A FOWL IS
A FRUIT—GIVES A FARTHER AC-
COUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S RECEP-
TION BY HER FATHER, AND BY
THE KING—TOMMY AND HALLY-
CARNIE PROVIDED FOR AT COURT
—YOUWARKEE AND HER FATHER
VISIT THE COLUMBS, AND ARE
VISITED—HER RETURN PUT OFF
TILL NEXT WINTER; WHEN HER
FATHER IS TO COME WITH HER.

T H E next day I prepared again
of the beft of every thing for my
new guefts. I killed three fowls, and
ordered Pedro (who was as good a
cook almoft as myself) to get them
ready for boiling, whilft we took a
walk to the lake. Though we went
out in the clearest part of the morn-
ing, I heard no complaint of the light.
I took the liberty to ask my brother,
if the light did not offend him; for I
told him my wife could not bear fo
much without speftacles. 'What is
that speftacle?' says he. 'Some-
thing I made your filder;' says I, 'to
prevent the inconvenience of too
much light upon her eyes.' He faid
the light was fcarce at all troublefome
to him, for he had been in much greater,
and was used to it; and that the
glumms, who travelled much abroad,
could bear more light than the gew-
reys, who ftaid much at home; thefe
flirring but little out, unlefs in large
companies, and that of one another,
and very rarely admitted glumma
amongt them before marriage. For
his own part, he faid, he had an office
at Craifdoort, which, though he ex-
cuted chiefly by a deputy, obliged
him to refide there fometimes for a long
feafon together; and that being a more
luminous country than Arndrum-
flake,
flake, light was become familiar to him; for it was very observably, that some who had been used to it young, though they might in time overcome it, yet at first it was very uneasy.

I was upon the tender whilst he spoke, left, before he had done, a question I had a thousand times thought to have asked my wife, should flip out of my head, as it had so often done before, and was what I had for years desired to be resolved in; viz. what the meaning of the word flit was, when applied to a man. So, on his pausing, I said, that his mention of Crashdoort reminded me of enquiring what crachine meant, when applied to a glummi or gawrey. It would be no hard task; he said, to satisfy me in respect of that, as I already understood the nature of the graundee; whereupon he went on thus—'Slitting is the only punishment we use to incorrigible criminals; our method is, where any one has committed a very heinous offence, or, which is the same thing, has multiplied the acts of offence, he has a long string tied round his neck, in the manner of a cravat; and then two glummi, one at each end, take it in their hands, standing side by side with him; two more stand before him, and two behind him; all which in that manner take flight, so that the string keeps the criminal in the middle of them; thus they conduct him to Crashdoort, which lies farther on the other side of Arndrumanfflake than this arkoe does on this side of it, and is just such an arkoe as ours, but much bigger within the rocks. When they come to the coovert they alight, where my duty immediately orders the malefactor to be flit, so that he can never more return to Normnbdriflutt, or indeed by any means get out of that arkoe, but must end his days there. The method of slitting is thus: the criminal is laid on his back with his graundee open, and after a recapitulation of his crimes and his condemnation, the officer with a sharp stone flits the gume between each of the flutes of the graundee, so that he can never fly more. But what is still worse to new comers, if they are not very young, is; the light of the place, which is so strong, that it is some years before they can overcome it, if ever they do.'

This difficult gave me a great pleasure; thereupon I repeated the dialogue that had passed between me and Youwarkee about my being flit, and how we had held an argument a long time, without being able to come at one another's meaning. 'But pray, brother,' says I, 'how comes that light country to agree so well with you?'—'Why,' says he, 'the constellation of Crashdoort is reckoned one of the most honourable employments in the state, by reason of the hazard of it, and the peril accepting it must be young; it was, by my father's interest at court, given to me at nine years of age; my friend Rosig has followed my fortune in it ever since, being much about my age, and has a post under me there; in short, by being obliged to be so much there, and from to tender an age too, I have pretty well ensured myself to any light.'

By this time we had got home again to dinner, which Pedro had set out as elegantly as my country could afford, consisting of pickles and preserves, as usual, a dish of hard eggs, and boiled fowls with spinaige.

My guests, as I expected, stared at the fowls, but never offered to touch them, or seemed in the least inclined to do so. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a wing on each of their plates, and a leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to see how I managed it, I stuck in my fork, cut off a flice, dipped it in the salt, and put it in my mouth. Just as I did they did, and appeared very well pleased with the taste. 'I never in my life,' says Rosig, 'saw a crullmott of this shape before;' and laid hold of a leg, (taking it for a stick I had thrust in, as he told me afterwards) intending to pull it out; but finding it grew there, 'Mr. Peter,' says he, 'you have the oddest-shaped crullmott's that ever I saw; pray, what part of the woods do they grow in?—Grow in?' says I. 'Aye,' says he, 'I mean whether your crullmott-trees are like ours or not?—'Why,' says I, 'these fowls are about my yard and the wood too.'— What,' says he,
is it a running plant like a bott?—

No, no," says I, "a bird that I keep

tame about my house; and these,

(shewing him the eggs) are the eggs

of these birds, and the birds grow

from them."—Pr'ythee," says Quan-
grollart, "never let's enquire what

they are till we have dined; for my

brother Peter will give us nothing

we need be afraid of.

It growing into the night by that
time we rose from table, I fet a bowl
of punch before them, made with my
treacle and four rams-horn juice,
which they pulled off plentifully.
After some bumpters had gone round,
I defired my brother to proceed where
he left off, in the account of my wife's
reception with her father.

When my father," says he, "had
recovered himself by some hours re-
pofe, the first thing he did was to
order my sister Youwarkee to be
called; who coming into his pre-

cence, he took her from her knees,

Killed her, and ordered all to depart

but myself and Hallycarnie. Then

bidding us fit down, says he to your

wife, "Daughter, your appearance,

whom I have so long lamented as

dead, has given me the truest cor-
dial I could have received, and I

hope will add both to my health and

years. I have heard, you suspect my

anger for some part of your past

conduct," (for she had hinted so to

her sister and me) "which you jut-

tly enough imagine may be cenfured;

but, my dear life, I am this day,

what I did not expect any more to

be, a father of a new-born child;

and not of one only, but of many;

and this day, I say, daughter, shall

not be spent in sorrow and excuses;

or any thing to interrupt our mu-
tual felicity; neither will I ever

hereafter permit you to beg my for-
givenes, or attempt to palliate any

of your proceedings; for know,

child, that a benevolence freely be-

flowed, is better than twice it's va-

lue obtained by petition; I there-
fore, as in preference of the Great

Image, your brother and fitter, at

this instant, erase from my mind

for ever what thoughts I may have

had prejudicial to the love I ever

bore you, as I will have you to do

all such as may cloud the unreferv-

ed complacency you used to appear

with before me—and now, Quan-
grollart," says he, "let the guard

be drawn out before my coovett, and

let the whole country be entertain-
ed for seven days; proclaim li-

berty to all persons confined; and

let not the leaf sorrow appear in

any face throughout my colombat."

I retired immediately, and gave

the necessary orders for the speedy
dispatch of my father's commands;

which indeed were performed to the

utmost; and nothing for seven days

was to be heard through the whole
district of Arndrummitke, but joy

and the name of Youwarkee.

My father, so soon as he had dis-
patched the above orders, sent for

the children before him, whom he

kissed and blessed, frequently lifting

up his eyes in gratitude to the Great

Image, for the unexpected happiness

he enjoyed on that occasion; and then

he ordered Youwarkee to let him

know what had befallen her in her

absence, and where the lived, and

with whom.

Youwarkee was setting out with

some indirect excuses; but my fa-

ther absolutely forbid her, and

charged her only to mention plain

facts, without flourishes. So she

began with her swangean, and the ac-

cidental fall she had, your taking her

in after it; and saving her life. She
told him, your continued kindness

so wrought upon her, that she found

herself incapable of diseemming

you, but never shewed her affection,

till, having examined every parti-
cular of your life, and finding you

a worthy man, she could not avoid

becoming your wife; and she said,

the reason why she always declined

being seen by her friends, in their

swangeans, was, for fear she should

be forced from you, though she

longed to see us; and that at last,

she was come by your content; and,

that had it rested there only, she might

have come much sooner; for that

you would often have had her shew

herself to her friends, when you

heard them, having strong desires

yourself to be known to them.

My father, upon hearing this, was

so charmed with your tendernefs and

affection to his daughter, that you

already rival his own issue in his

efeem, and he is perfuaded he can

never
never do enough for you or your children.

The noise of Youwarkee's return, and my father's rejoicing, soon spread over all Normandy; and King Georgietti sent express to my father, to command him to attend with his wife and children at Brandongrarp, his capital. Thither accordingly we all went, with a grand retinue, and staid twenty days. The king took great delight, as well as the ladies of the court, to hear Youwarkee and her children talk English, and in being informed of you and your way of life; and so fond was Yaccombourfe (who, though not the king's wife, is instead of one) of my nephew Tommy, that, upon my father's return, she took him to herself, and assured my sister she should continue near her person till he was qualified for better preferment. The king's sister Jahamel would also have taken Patty into her service; but she begged to be permitted to attend her mother to Arndrumnifake; so Hallycarnie her sister, who chose to continue with Jahamel, was received in her room.

Upon my father's return to Arndrumnifake, he found no less than fifteen express from several colombs, desiring to rejoice with him on the return of his daughter, with particular invitations to him and her to spend some time with them. My father, though he hates more pomp than is necessary to support dignity, could do no less than severally visit them, with Youwarkee, attended by a grand retinue, spending more or less days with each; hoping when that was over, he should have some little time to spend in retirement with his daughter before her departure, who now began to be uneasy for you, who, she said, would suffer the greatest concern in her absence; but, upon their return from those visits, at about the end of four months progress, they found themselves in as little likelihood of retirement as the first day; for the inferior colombs were continually pestering away, one after another, to perform their respects to my father, and all the inferior magistrates of smaller districts sending to know when they might be permitted to do the same. Poor Youwarkee, who saw no end of it, expressed her concern for you in so lively a manner to my father, that, finding he could by no means put a stop to the good-will of the people, and not hearing the thoughts of Youwarkee's departure till she had now received all their compliments, he resolved to keep her with him till the next winter set in, in these parts, and then to accompany her himself to Graundevolot. In the mean while, that you might not remain in an uneasy suspense what was become of my sister, he ordered me to dispatch messengers express to inform you of the reasons of her stay; but I told him, if he pleased, I would execute that office myself, with my friend Roig, with which he was very well pleased, and enjoined me to assure you of his affection, and that he himself was debtor to you for the love and kindness you had shewn his daughter.

Thus, brother, says Quargrollart, I hope I have acquitted myself of my charge to your satisfaction, and it only now remains that I return you my acknowledgments for your hearty welcome to myself and friend; which (with concern I speak it) I am afraid I shall not have an opportunity to return at Arndrumflake, the distance being so immense a great, and you not having the grandee. To-morrow morning my friend and I will set out on our return home.
I had proposed to catch them a dinner of fresh fish in the lake, and to shew them my boat, and how and where I came into this arbor: believing, by what I had observed, it would be no small novelty to them. So, having engaged them one day more, we parted for that night to rest.

CHAP. XXIX.


I was heartily sorry to lose my brother thus quickly, and still more so to find it would be a long time yet ere I should see my wife; however, I was resolved to behave as cheerfully as possible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining hours of Quangrollart's stay with me, to rivet myself thoroughly in his esteem, and to dismist him with a most cordial affection to me and the rest of my children here with him. I rose early in the morning, to provide a good breakfast for my guests, and considering we should be in the air most part of that day, I treated them with a dish of hot fish-loup, and set before them on the table a jovial bottle of brandy, and my silver can; this last piece I chose to shew them, as a specimen of the richness of my household furniture, and the grandeur of my living, concealing most of my other curiosities till Pendlehamby my father-in-law's arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have somewhat new of this kind to display at his entertainment.

After a plenteous meal, we set out on our pleasant expedition, having told Pedro what to get for dinner, and that I believed we should not return till late.

We first took a turn in the wood, but I did not lead them near my tent, because I did not choose my wife should hear of that till the came; I then shewed them my farm-yard and poultry,
to see how they flared at the fish, creeping backwards, and then at me and the net, it made me very merry to myself, though I did not care to shew it.

I drew up at that draught twenty-two fishes in all, of which a few were near an ell long, several about two feet, and some smaller. When they saw me take up the large ones in my arms, and tumble them into the boat, they both, unrequested, took up of the small ones, and put them in likewise; but dropping them every time they struck their tails, the fish had commonly two or three falls ere they came to the boat.

I asked them how they liked that sport, and they told me it was something very surprizing, that I should know just where the fish were, as they could see none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whistle, I perceived by this, they imagined I could whistle the fish together as well as the fowls, and I did not undeceive them, being well enough pleased they should think me excellent for something, as I really thought they were on account of the grandee.

Upon our return, when I had docked my boat, as there were too many fish to carry up by hand to the grotto, I desired them to take a turn upon the shore till I fetched my cart for it. I made what haste I could, and brought one of my guns with me, which I determined, upon some occasion or other, to fire off; for I took it they would be more surprized at the explosion of that than at any thing they had yet seen. Having loaded my fish, and marched backwards, they eyed my cart very much, and wondered what made the wheels move about so, taking them for legs it walked upon, till I explained the reason of it, and then they desired to draw it, which they did with great eagerness, one at a time, the other observing its motions.

As we advanced homewards, there came a large water-fowl, about the size of a goose, flying cross us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my brother, 'I wish I had it!' — If you have a mind for it, says I, 'I'll give it you.' — 'I wish you would,' says he, for I never saw any thing like it in my life!' — Stand still then, says I; and leaping two or three yards before them, I fired, and down it dropped. I then turned about to observe what impression the gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to see them so terrified. Roger, before I could well look about, had got fifty paces from me, and my brother was lying behind the cart of fish, I called and asked them what was the matter, and desired them to come to me, telling them they should receive no harm, and offered my brother the gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to Roger.

Finding they made a serious affair of it, (for I saw them whispering together) I was under some apprehension for the consequences of my frolick. Thinks I, 'If under this disgust they take flight, refusing to hear me, and report that I was about to murder them, or tell any other pernicious story to my father of me, I am absolutely undone, and shall never see Youwarkee more.' So I laid down the gun by the fish, and moving slowly towards them, expostulated with them upon their disorder; assuring them, that though the object before them might surprise them, it was but a common instrument in my country, which every boy used to take birds with; and protested to them, that the gun of itself could do nothing without my skill directing it, and that they might be sure I should never employ that but to their service. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reasoning coolly, they blamed me for not giving them notice. Says I, 'There was no room for me to explain the operation of the gun to you whilst the bird was on the wing, for it would have been gone out of my reach before I could have made you sensible of that, and so have escaped me; which, as you desired me to get it you, I was resolved it should not do. But for yourself, surely you could have had no difficulty in me; that is highly becoming of man to man, especially relations; and, above all, a relation to whom you have brought the wellcomest news upon earth, in the love of my dear father, and his reconciliation to my wife.'

At last, by degrees, I brought them to confess, that it was only a groundless sudden terror which suppressed their reason for a while, but that what I said
fayed was all very true, and as their se-
rious reflection returned, they were sa-
tisfied of it. I then stepped for the
bird, and brought it to them: it was
a very fine-feathered creature, and
they were very much delighted with
the beauty of it, and desired it might
be laid upon the cart and carried home.

All the way we went afterwards to
the grotto, nothing was to be heard
from them but my praises, and what a
great and wise man brother Peter was.
And no wonder now, says Quangrollart,
'a once knowing him, could never leave
him.' It was not my business to
gratify this, but only to receive it
with so much modesty as might serve to
heighten their good opinion of me;
and I found, upon my wife's return,
that Quangrollart had painted me in
no mean colours to his father.

I once more had the pleasure of en-
tertaining them with the old fare, and
some of the fresh fish, part boiled and
part fried, which last they chose before
the boiled. We made a very cheer-
ful supper, talking over that day's ad-
vantages, and of their ensuing jour-
ney home, after which we retired to
rest, mutually pleased. We all arose
early the next morning. We took a
short breakfast, after which Quangrol-
Iart and Rosig stuck their chaplets
with the longest and most beautiful
feathers of the bird I shot, thinking
them a fine ornament. Being now
ready for departure, they embraced me
and the children, and were just taking
flight, when it came into my head that
as the king's mistres had taken Tom-
my into her protection, it might possi-
bly be a means of ingratiating him in
her favour if I sent him the flagellum,
(for I had, in my wife's absence, made
two others near as good, by copying
exactly after it.) I therefore desired
to know, if one of them would trouble
himself with a small piece of wood. I
very much wanted to convey to my
son Rosig answered, with all his
heart; if it was not very long he
would put it into his colapet. So I
stepped in, and fetching the flagellum,
presented it to Rosig. My brother
seeing it look odd, with holes in it,
desired (after he had asked if it was
not a little gun) to have the handling
of it. It was given him, and he sur-
veyed it very attentively. Being in-
quisitive into the use of it, I told him
it was a musical instrument, and play-
ed several tunes upon it; with which
he and his companion were in raptures.
I doubt not they would have set a week
to hear me if I would have gone on;
but I desiring the latter to take care of
it's safety, he put it in his colapet, and
away they went.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.
THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

PETER Prepares FOR HIS FATHER'S RECEIPTION—ARGUMENTS ABOUT HIS BEARD—EXPECTS HIS WIFE—REFLECTIONS ON HER NOT COMING—SEES A MESSANGER ON THE ROCK—HAS NOTICE OF PENDLEHAMBY'S ARRIVAL, AND PREPARES A TREAT.

It is news my late visitors had brought me, set my mind quite at ease; and now, having leisure to look into my own affairs, with the summer before me, I began to consider what preparations I must make against the return of my wife; for, according to the report I had heard, I concluded there would be a great number of attendants; and, as her father would no doubt pique himself upon the grandeur of his equipage, if his followers should see nothing in me but a plain dirty fellow, I should be contemned, and perhaps my wife, through my means, be slighted; or, at least, lose that respect the report of me had in a great measure procured her.

The first thing therefore that I did, was to look into my chests again, wherein I knew there were many of the Portuguese captain's cloaths, and take out such as would be most suitable to the occasion, and lay them all by themselves. I found a blue cloth laced-coat, double-breasted, with very large gold buttons, and very broad gold button-holes, lined with white silk; a pair of black velvet breeches, a large gold-laced hat, and a point neckcloth, with two or three very good shirts, two pair of red-heeled shoes, a pair of white and another of scarlet silk-stockings, two silver-hilted swords, and several other good things; but upon examination of these cloaths, and by a letter or two found in the pockets of some of them, directed to Captain Jeremiah Vauclaile, in Threadneedle Street, London, I judged these belonged to the English captain, taken by the Portuguese ship in Africa. I immediately tried some of them on, and thought they became me very well, and laid all those in particular chests, to be ready when the time came, and let them into one of my inner rooms.

Upon examining the contents of another chest, I found a long scarlet cloak laced, a case of razors, a pair of scissors, and shaving-glass; a long-wig, and two bob-wigs, and laid them by; for I was determined, as I might possibly have no other opportunity, to make myself appear as considerable as I could.

When I had digested in my mind upon
upon what occasions I would appear in either of them, and laid them in proper order; Pedro and I went several days to work with the net, and caught abundance of fish, which I salted and dried; and we cut a great quantity of long grafts to dry, and spread in my tent for the lower gentry, and made up a little cock of it; we also cut and piled up a large parcel of fire-wood; and as I had now about thirty of the best fish-skins, each of which would cover four chairs, I nailed them on for cushions to my chairs, and the rest I sewed together, and made rugs of them.

I had observed, that my brother Quangrollart, and Rofig, neither of them had beards, and as they were quite smooth-chinned, I conjectured that none of their countrymen had any;

So,' says I, 'if that is the case, as I have now both scissors and razors, I will e'en cut off mine, to be like them.' I then set up my glafs, taking my scissors in hand; but had not quite closed them for a snip, when I considered, that as I was not of their country, and was so different from them in other respects, whether it would not add to my dignity to appear with my beard before them. This I debated some time, and then determined in favour of my beard; but as this question still ran in my mind, and I wavered sometimes this way, sometimes that, I some days after prepared again for execution, and took a large snip off; 'When,' says I, 'how can I tell whether I can have after all? I have not tried yet, and if I can't, how much more ridiculous shall I look with stubbed hair here and there, than with this comely beard?' I must say, I never in my life had so long a debate with myself, it holding upwards of two months, varying almost every time I thought of it; till one day, dressing myself in a suit I had not before tried on, and looking in the glafs; 'It can never be,' says I, 'that this grave beard should suit with these fine cloaths: no, I will have it off, I am resolved.' I had no sooner given another good snip, than spying the cloak, I had a mind to see how I looked in that: 'Aye,' says I, 'now I see I must either wear this beard or not this cloak. How majestic does it look! So sage, so grave, it denotes wisdom and folly, dity; and if they already think well of me, don't let me be fool enough to relinquish my claim to that for a gay coat.' I had no sooner fixed on this, than I took up all the implements to put again into the chest; and the last of them being the glafs, I would have one more look before I parted with it: but my beard made such a horrid, frightful figure, with the three great cuts in it, that thought it grieved me to think I must part with it just when I had come to a resolution to preserve it, I fell to work with my scissors, and off it came; and after two or three trials, I became very expert with my razor.

Winter coming on, as I knew I must soon have more occasion than ever for a stock of provision, from the increase of mouths I expected, I laid in a stock for a little army, and when the hurry of that was over, I kept a sharp look-out upon the level, in expectation of my company, and had once a mind to have brought my tent thereto entertain them in; but it was too much trouble for the hands I had, so I dropped the design. I took one or other of the children with me every day, and grew more and more uneasy at hearing nothing of them; and as uncertain attendance naturally breeds thoughtfulness, and the hours in no employ pass so leisurely as in that, my mind prefixed numerous intervening accidents, that might, if not entirely prevent their coming, at least postpone it.

Thinks I, (and that I fixed for my standard) 'Youwarkie, I am sure, would come if he could; but then, says I, 'here is a long flight, and to be undertaken by an old man too, (for I thought my father-in-law much older than I afterwards found him) who is now safe and quiet at home; and having his daughter with him, is no doubt desirous of continuing so now, what cares he for my uneasiness? He can find one pretence or other, no doubt, of drilling on the time till the dark weather is over; and then, forthwith, it will be too light to come; and thus shall I be hung up in suspense for another year; or what if my brother, as he called himself, for he may be no more a brother of mine than the pope's, for aught I know, came only on a pretence to see how I went on; and not finding, for all
his flam complimuts to me, his father married to his father's liking, should advise him not to send my wife back again; and so all the trouble I have had on their account should only prove a standing monument of my foolish credulity! Nay, it is not impossible, but as I have already had one message to inform me Tommy and Hallycarnie are provided for, as much as to say in plain English, I shall see them no more, so I may soon have another by some sneaking puppy or other, whom I suppose I am to treat for the news, to tell me my wife and Patty are provided for too, and I am to thank my kind benefactors for taking so great a charge off my hands. Am I? No! I'll first set my tent, cloaths, chairs, and all other mementos of my stupidity on fire, and by perishing what's left of us, in the blaze, exterminate at once the wretched remains of a defecled family. I hate to be made a fool of!

I had scarce finished my soliloquy, when I heard a monstrous fort of groan or growl in the air, like thunder at a distance. 'What's that, Pedro?' says I; 'I never heard the like before,' says he. 'Look about, boy,' says I, 'do you see any thing?' We heard it again. 'Hark!' says Pedro, 'it comes from that end of the lake.' While we were listening to the third sound, says Pedro, 'Daddy, yonder is something black upon the rock, I did not see just now. — Why, it moves,' says I, 'Pedro; here is news, good or bad.' — 'Hope the best, daddy,' says Pedro; 'I wish it may be mummy.' — 'No,' says I, 'Pedro, I don't expect her before I hear from her.' — 'Why then,' says Pedro, 'here they come; I can plainly discern three of them. If my brother Tommy should be there, daddy!' — 'No,' says I, Pedro, no such good news; they tell me Tommy's provided for, and that's to suffice for the los of my child; and yet Pedro, if I could get you settled in England in some good employ, I should consent to that: but what Tommy's to be I know not.'

By this time the three persons were so near, that seeing us, they called out 'Peter!' and 'I making signs for them to alight, they settled just before me, and told me that Pendlehamby and Youvarkee would be with me by light next day.

I had no sooner heard this, but so far was I from firing my tent, that I invited them to my grotto, set the belt chair before them, and with over-haste to do more than one thing at once, I even left undone what I might have done.

I asked them who came with my father; and they told me about two hundred guards: that knocked me up again, as I had but prepared for about sixty; thinks I, 'My scheme is all untwisted.' I then asked them, what loud noise it was, and if they heard it just before I saw them over the rock. They told me they heard only the grippack they brought with them to distinguish them from ordinary messengers; and then one of them showed it me, for I had before only taken it for a long staff in his hand; 'But,' says he, 'you will hear them much louder to-morrow, and long er, before they come to you.'

Having entertained them to their content, I sent them to rest, not choosing to ask any questions; for I avoided anticipating the pleasure of hearing all the news from Youvarkee herself. However, the boys and I prepared what provisions of fowl and fish we could in the time, to be ready cold against they came, and then laid down ourselves.

ChAP. II.

Peter settles the formality of his father's reception—description of their march, and alighting, receives his father—conducts him to his grotto—offers to beg pardon for his marriage—is prevented by Pendlehamby—Youvarkee not known in English habit—quarters the officers in the tent.

My mind ran so all night upon the settling the formality with which I should receive Pendlehamby, that I got little or no rest. In the morning I spread my table in as neat a manner as I could, and having dressed myself, Pedro, Jimmy, and David, we marched to the plain; myself carrying a chair,
a chair, and each of them a stool. I was dressed in a cinnamon-coloured gold-button coat, scarlet waistcoat, velvet breeches, white silk stockings, the campaign-wig flowing, a gold-laced hat and feather, point cravat, silver sword, and over all my cloak: as for my sons, they had the cloaths my wife made before she went.

When we heard them coming, I marshalled the children in the order they were to fit, and charged them to do as they saw me do; but to keep rather a half-pace backward than me; and then sitting down in my chair, I ordered Pedro to his stool on my right-hand, and Jemmy to his on my left, and David to the left of Jemmy.

I then sent two of the messengers to meet them, with instructions to let Youwarkee know where I waited for them, that they might alight at a small distance before they came to me. This she having communicated to her father, the order ran through the whole corps immediately when and where to alight.

It will be impossible for me by words to raise your ideas adequate to the grandeur of the appearance this body of men made, coming over the rock; but, as I perceive your curiosity is on the stretch to comprehend it, I shall faintly aim at gratifying you.

After we had heard for some time a sound as of distant rumbling thunder, or of a thousand bears in comfort, serenading in their hoarsest voices, we could just perceive by the clearness of the dawn gilding the edge of the rock, a black stream arise above the summit of it, seemingly about forty paces broad; when the noise increasing very much, the stream arose broader and broader; and then you might perceive rows of poles, with here and there a streamer; and as soon as ever the main body appeared above the rock, there was such an universal shout as rent the air, and echoing from the opposite rock, returned the salute to them again. This was succeeded with a most ravishing sound of voices in song, which continued till they came pretty near me; and then the first line consisting of all the trumpets mounting a considerable height, and still blowing, left room for the next ranks, about twenty abreast, to come forward beneath them; each of which dividing in the middle, alighted in ranks at about twenty paces distant from my right and left, making a lane before me, at the farther end of which Pendlehamby and his two daughters alighted, with about twenty of his guards behind them; the remainder consisting of about twenty more, coming forward over my head, and alighting behind me; and during this whole ceremony, the gripe sacks found with such a din, it was astonishing.

Poor Youwarkee, who knew nothing of my dres, or of the loss of my beard, was thunder-struck when she saw me, not being able to observe any visage I had for my great wig and hat; but putting a good face on the matter, and not doubting but if the person she saw was not me, she should soon find her husband, for she knew the children by their cloaths, she came forward at her father's right-hand, I sitting as great as a lord; till they came within about thirty paces of my feet; and then gravely riling, I pulled off my hat and made my obeisance, and again at ten steps forward; so that I made my third low bow close at the feet of Pendlehamby, the children all doing the same. I then kneeling with one leg, embraced his right-knee, who raising me up, embraced me. Then retiring three steps, and coming forward again, I embraced Youwarkee some time; during which the children observed my pattern with Pendlehamby, who took them up and kissed them.

I whispered Youwarkee to know if any more of her relations were in the train, to whom I ought to pay my compliments; she told me only her sister Hallycarnie, just behind her father; I then saluted her, and stepping forward to the old gentleman's left-hand, I ushered him through the lines of guards to my chair; where I caused him to sit down with Youwarkee and Hallycarnie on each side, and myself on the left of Hallycarnie.

After expressing the great honour done me by Pendlehamby in this visit, I told him I had a little grotto about half a mile through the wood, to which if he pleased to command, we would retire; for I had only placed that seat to relieve him immediately upon his descent.

Pendlehamby rose, and all the grip-sacks
facks founded; he leading Youwarkee in his right-hand, and I Hallycarnie in mine.

At the grotto, my father being feated, taking Youwarkee in my hand, we paid our obedience to him. I would have asked his pardon for taking his daughter to wife without his leave, and was going on in a set speech I had studied for the purpose: but he refused to hear me, telling me I was mistaken, he had consented. I was replying I knew he had been so good as to pass it over, but that would not excuse—when he again interrupted me, by saying, 'If I approve it, and esteem you, what can you desire more?' So, finding the subject ungrateful, I desisted:

I then gave each of them a silver cannon of Madeira, and Youwarkee retired. I soon made an excuse to follow her, to learn if she was pleased with what I had done. Says she, 'My dearest, what is come to you? I will promise you, but for fear of surprizing my father, I had disowned you for my husband. — Dear You-see,' says I, 'do you approve my dress, for this is the English fashion?' — 'This, Peter,' says she, 'I perceived attracted all eyes to you, and indeed is very showy, and I approve it in regard to thofe we are now to please; but you are not to imagine I esteem you more in this than your own old jacket; for it is Peter I love, in this and all things else: but step in again, I shall only dress, and come to you.' My wife being drest in her English gown, just crossed the room where my father sat, to see Dicky, who was in another side-room. I was then fitting by, and talking with him. 'Son,' says my father, 'I understand you had no other woman in this arkoe but my daughter; for surely you have no child so tall as that,' pointing to my wife. 'No, Sir,' said I, 'that is a friend.' — 'Is he come to you,' says he, 'in my daughter’s absence?' — 'O Sir,' says I, 'she is very well known to my wife.'

Whilft we were talking, in comes Youwarkee, with the child in her arms, which the kept covered to her wrists with her gown-sleeve, to hide her grannie; and playing with the child, talked only in English to it. — 'Is this your youngest son?' says my father. I told him 'Yes,' — 'Pray, Madam,' says I, 'bring the child to my father.' — 'Madam,' says he, 'you have a fine baby in your arms; has his mother seen him since she came home?' He speaking this in his own tongue, and Youwarkee looking at me, as if she could not understand him, I interpreted it to her. My sister then desired to see the child, but I was forced again to interpret there too. In short, they both talked with my wife near half an hour; but neither of them knew her; till at last, saying in her own language, 'That is your grand-daddy, my dear Dicky!' the old gentleman smoked her out; 'I’ll be slit,' says he, 'if that is not Youwarkee!' — It’s impossible,' says Hallycarnie. Indeed, sister,' says Youwarkee, 'you are mistaken!' and my father protesting he had not the least suspicion of her, till she spoke in his tongue, rofe, and kissing her and the child, desired her to appear in that habit during his stay.

I asked Pedro what provision had been made for the guards: 'Son,' says my father, 'I bring not this number of people to eat you up; they have their subsistence with them;' and he would by no means suffer me to allow them any. I then desisted to know if there were any officers or others to whom he would have shewn any particular marks of distinction. 'Son,' says the old glum, 'you seem to have studied punifhions; and though I should be sorry to incommode you for their fakes, if you could procure some felter and fleep-room for about twenty of them, who are superiors, ten at a time, while the rest are on duty, I should be glad.' I told him I had purposely erected a tent, which would with great ease accommodate a greater number; and as they were of distinction, with his leave I inquired upon providing for them; to which, with some reluctance, I procured his content.

When Pendlehamby was refreßhed, he would go with me to fee the officers quarters; and shewing him my tent, he having never seen such a thing before, was going to climb up the out-side of it, taking it for earth. 'Hold, Sir,' said I, 'you cannot do so!' Then taking him to the front of it, I turned aside the blue cloth, and desired him to walk in; at which he seemed wonderfully pleased, and asked me how it was made. I told...
told him in as few words as I could; but he understood so little of it, that anything else I had said might have done as well. He mightly approved it; and calling the chief officer, I desired he would command my house, and that provision should be supplied to his quarters daily; at which he hesitating, I assured him I had my father's leave for what I offered; whereupon he stroked his chin.

I then asked him if he had any clever fellows under him to serve them, and dress their provisions; but he hoped, he said, they were ready-dressed, as his men knew little of that matter; but for any other piece of service, as many as I pleased should be at my command.

**CHAP. III.**

**THE MANNER OF THEIR DINNER—**

**BELIEVE THE FISH AND FOWL TO BE FRUITS—**

**HEARS HIS BROTHER AND THE COLUMBS ARE COMING—**

**ACCOUNT OF THEIR LYING—**

**PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WANT OF THE GRAUN-**

**DER—**

**THEY VIEW THE ARKOE—**

**SERVANTS HARDER TO PLEASE THAN THEIR MASTERS—**

**REASONS FOR DIFFERENT DRESSES THE SAME DAY.**

PENDLEHAMBY having a mind to view my arkoie, took a long walk with Hallycarnie in the wood till dinner-time; and he having before told me, that some of his guards always waited on him at meals, I ordered their dinner before his return, sending a large dish of cold fowls, cut into joints, into the tent, to be spread on clean leaves I had laid on the chefts, and setting a sufficient quantity of bread and fish there also, I desired the officers present to refresh themselves now; and the rest, when relieved, should have a fresh supply. I saw there was an oddity in their countenances, which at first I did not comprehend; but presently turning about to the superior, 'Sir,' says I, 'though this food may look unusual to you, it is what my island affords, and you will be better reconciled to it after tasting.' So taking a piece of fowl, and dipping it in the salt, I eat a bit myself, and recommended another to him; who, eating it, they all fell to without farther scruple; above all things commending the salt, as what they had never tasted the like of before, though they thought they had both of the fish and fowl.

I then told them where my supply of water came from, and that they must furnish themselves with that by their own men.

Upon the return of my father and sister, the gripshack founded for dinner; when four officers on duty entering, defired, as their posts, to have the serving up of the dishes; one of them I perceived having fet on the first dish, never stirred from behind Pendlehamby; but upon his least word or sign, ordered the others what to do or bring, which he only prefented to my father; and he frequently gave him a piece from his own plate; but the other officers served at the table promiscuously.

After dinner I brought in a bowl of punch; when begging leave to proceed in my country method, I drank to my father's health. 'So, daughter,' says he, to my wife, 'we are at the old game again.—Son,' says he, 'this is no novelty to me,' Youwarkee constantly drinking to the health of her dear Peter, and the children at Graundevolet, and obliging us to pledge her, as she called it: but I thank you, and will return your civility; so taking a glass, 'Son and daughter,' says he, 'long life, love and unity, attend you and my grand-children!' Youwarkee and I both rising till he had done, returned him our thanks.

When we had sat some time, 'Son,' says my father, 'you and your wife having lived so retired, I fear my company and attendants must put you to an inconvenience; now, as my son intends you a visit also, in company with several of my brother colums, if we shall be too great a load upon you, declare it, for they will be at Battrindrigg arkoie to-morrow, to know whether it will be agreeable for them to proceed.

'You know, son,' says my father, 'the mouth is a great devourer, and that the flock your family cannot consume in a year, by multiplying their numbers, may be reduced in a day; now freely let me know (for you say you
you provided for us,) how your stock
stands; that you may not only pleasure
us, but we not injure you.

I told him, as for dried fish I had a
vast quantity, and that my fowls were
so numerous I knew not my stock; as
to bread, I had a great deal, and might
have almost what more I would; and
then for fresh fish, the whole province of
Arrondumstaute could not soon de-
vour them; but for my pickles and
preserves, I had neither such large
quantities, nor conveniences to bestow
them if I had.

If this be the case, son," says my
father, "I may lend your brother word
to proceed," and dispatched ten me-
fengers with a gripfactor to haunt his
son's arrival.

It now began to be time for rest, and
the old gentleman growing pretty mel-
low with the punch, which, by the
heavy pulls he took at it, I perceived
was no disagreeable entertainment to
him, I conducted him to his repose;
and disposing of the rest of the family,
Youwarkee and I with great impatience
retired.

You may imagine I was sincerely
glad to find myself once more along
with my Youwarkee; when, after a
transport of mutual endearments, I
desired to know how Pendlehamby first
received her; which she told me, with
every circumstance, in so affecting a
manner, that the tears forced passage
from mine eyes in perfect streams; and
I loved the dear man ever after as my
own father.

She told me Tommy was in great
favour at court before her brother re-
turned from me; but ever since I sent
him the flagellet he had been careful
above measure, and would soon be a
great man: that Hallycarne was a
constant attendant on Jahanmel both in
her diversions and retirement; and,
for the most jurment, would in time marry
very well: as for Patty, the said her
father intended, with my leave, to adopt
her as his own child.

My wife slept very sound after her
journey; but my hurry of spirits de-
nying me that refreshment, I never so
much as now lamented the want of the
grandee: "For," thinks I, "now I
have once again tasted the fycets of
society, how shall I ever relish a total
defection of it, which in a few days
must be the case, when all this com-
pany are fled, and myself am reduced
to my old jacket and water-cart
again! Now, if I was as others here
are, I might make a better figure
than they by my superior knowledge
of things, and have the world my
own; nay, I would fly to my own
country, or to some other part of
the world, where, even the strange-
ness of my appearance would proc-
cure me a good subsistence.—But,"
says I, "if with my grandee I should
lose my sight, or only be able to live
in the dark in England, why I should
be full as bad as I am here! For
nobody would be able to keep me
company abroad, as my hours for
the air would be theirs of retirement;
and then, at home, it would be much
the same: no one would prefer my
company in a dark room in the day-
time, when they could enjoy others
in the light of the sun; then how
should I be the better for the gran-
dee, unless I fixed a resolution of
living here, or hereabouts? and then
to get into company, I must retire
to still darker regions, which my eyes
are no ways adapted to: in short, I
must be quite new-moulded, new-
made, and new-born too, before I
can attain my desires. Therefore,
Peter," says I, "be content; you
have been happy here in your wife
and children without those things;
then never make yourself so wretched
as to hope for a change which can
never possibly happen, and which,
perhaps, if obtained, might undo
you; but intend only what you can
compas, by weighing all circum-
cstances, and your felicity will lie in
very narrow bounds, free from two
of the greatest evils a man can be
beier by, hopes and fears; two in-
separable companions, and deadly
enemies to peace: for a man is de-
stroyed by hope through fear of dif-
appointment." This brought me a
flew of peace again: "Surely," says I,
I am one of the most unaccountable
amongst mankind! I never can re-
fect till I am worn down with vex-
ation.—O Glanlipze! Glanlipze!"
says I, "I shall never forget thy speech
after engaging the crocodile, that
every thing was to be attained by re-
solution by him that takes both ends
of a thing in his view at once, and
fairly deliberates what may be given
and taken from end to end. Surely, says I, this ought to be engraven on
brais, as I wish it was on my heart, it would prevent me many painful
hours, help me with more care to
compass attainable ends, and to rest
contented under difficulties insuper-
able: and if I live to rise again, I
will place it where it shall never be
more out of my sight, and will en-
force it not only more and more on
myself, but on my children.

With this thought I dropped to sleep,
and with this I awaked again; and the
first thing I did was to find a proper
place to write it, which, having fixed
for the door of my cupboard, I took
a burnt-flick for my pencil, and wrote
as follows—He that is resolved to
overcome, must have both ends of an
object in view at once, and fairly
deliberate what may be given and
taken from end to end; and then
pursuit the dictates of cool reason.
This I wrote in English, and then in
the Doort Swangentine tongue; and
having read it twice or thrice over, I
went for water and fish, and returned
before the family were up.

I took care to day also, that the offi-
cers should be as well served as possible,
and where an accommodation must be
wanting, I rather chose to let it fall
on my father than on them; for I had
ever observed it to be an easier thing
to satisfy the matter than the man; as
the matter weighs circumstances, and,
from a natural complacency in him-
self, puts a humane construction upon
that error or omifion which the fer-
vant wholly attributes to flight and
neglect.

My company being abroad, about
the time I expected their return, I
dressed myself as the day before, only
without my cloak, and in a black
bob-wig, and took a turn to meet
them.

Pendlehamby fying me first among
the trees, 'Daughter Youwarkee,' says
he, 'you have an husband, I think, for
every day in the week. Who's this,
my Ion Peter? Why, he is not the
same man he was yesterday.' She told
him she had heard me say we changed
our apparel almost every day in Eng-
land; nay, sometimes twice or thrice
the same day. 'What!' says Pendle-
hamby, are they so mischievous there
they are fearful of being known in
the latter by those who saw them in
the former part of the day?'

By this time I was come up, and
after paying due compliments, says
Youwarkee, 'My father did not know
you, my dear, you are so altered in
your other wig; and I told him in
your country they not only change
wigs, but their whole clothing, two
or three times a day sometimes.'—
'Son,' says my father, 'if it be so,
I cannot guess at the design of a
man's making himself unlike him-
self.'—'O, Sir,' says I, 'it is ow-
ing to the different functions he is
to perform that day: as, suppose, in
the morning he is to purifie business
with his inferiors, or meet at our
coffee-houses to hear and chat over
the news of the day, he appears in
a light easy habit proper for dispatch,
and comes home dirty; then, perhaps,
he is to dine with a friend at
mid-day, before whom, for respect's
fake, not chusing to be seen in his
dirty dress, he puts on something
handfomer; and, after spending some
time there, he has, it may be, an
appointment at court, at play, or with
his mistrefs, in all which last cafes,
if he has any thing better than or-
dinary, it is a part of good-breeding
to appear in that: but if the very
belt was to be used in common, it
might soon become the worst, and
not fit for a nice man to sit abroad
in.'—'The different custom of
countries you have told me of,' says
my father, 'is surprizing; here are
we born with our cloaths on, which
always fit, be we ever so small or
large; nay, are never the worse for
constant wearing; and you must be
eternally altering and changing co-
Iour, shape, and habit. But,' says
he, 'where do they get all these things?
Does every man make just what he
likes?'—'No,' says I, 'there are a
particular set of men whose busi-
nefs it is to make for all the rest.'—

'What,' says he, 'I suppose their
laiks make them?'—'No, Sir, they
are filgays,' says I. 'It is their
trade, they do it for a livelihood,
being paid by them they work for.
A fuit of these cloaths,' says I,
taking up the flap of my coat, 'will
cost what we call twelve or fourteen
pounds in money.'—'I don't un-
derstand you,' says he. 'Why, Sir,'
says I, 'that is as much as will pro-
vide one moderate man with all the
necessary things of life for two
months.'—'Then,' says he, 'these
nice men must be very rich.'—'No,
Sir,' said I, 'there you are under a
mistake; for if a man, very rich,
and who is known to be so, neglects
his habit, it is taken to be his choice;
but one who is not known to be rich,
and is really not so, is, by appearing
gay sometimes, thought to be so;
for he comes little abroad, and pinch-
es miserably at home, first to get
that gay suit, and then acts on the
fame part, to preserve it, till some
lucky hit may help him to the means
of getting another, as it frequently
happens by a good marriage: for
though he is but seldom seen in pub-
lie, yet, always appearing so fine
when he is, the ladies, whose fancies
are frequently more tickled with
flew than fene, admitting him only
at first as a companion, are at laft,
if worth any thing, taken in the
toils he is ever spreading for them;
and, becoming his wife, produce a
standing fund to make him a rich
man in reality, which he but per-
sonated before.'
Pendlehamby could not well under-
stand all I said; and I found by him
that all the riches they possessed were
only food and flowers; and, as I found
afterwards, when amongst them, they
know the want of nothing else: but
I am afraid I have put them upon an-
other way of thinking, though I aimed
at what we call civilizing of them.

CHAPTER IV.

QUAGROLLART ARRIVES WITH
THE COLAMBS.—STRAIGHTEN
FOR ACCOMMODATION—REMOVE
TO THE TENT—YOUWARKEE NOT
KNOWN—PETER RELATES PART
OF HIS TRAVELS—DISPUTE A-
BOUT THE BEAST-FISH SKINS.

SLEEPING longer than usual,
I was awakened next morning by a
griffon from Quagrollart; upon hearing
of which I roused immediately,
thinking they were at my door; but
the messenger told me they could not
be there in what I understood by his
signs to be about two hours; for they
have no such measure for time as
hours; so I dressed at leisure, and then
went to Youwarkee, and walked her.
'Yousee,' says I, 'your brother will
be here presently, and, I having a
mind you should appear as my coun-
try-woman, would have you dress
yourself.'

We walked down to the level, and
but just saved our distance, for the
van of them were within the arkoe
before we arrived, and with such a
train after them as seemed to reach the
whole length of the arkoe. The re-
gularity and order of their flight was
admirable, and the break of the trum-
pets so great, sounding all the way
they came, (for we had not only one
of them, but at least thirty, there
being so many colambas and petty
princes in the train, each with fifty
attendants) that I wondered how they
could bear it. As the principals
alighted, which was at least an hun-
dred paces from me, the grip-packs still
kept wing, founding as long as we
staid.

This was a very tedious ceremony;
for the guards alighting with their col-
ambas, ranged just as Pendlehamby's
had done, but reached as far as the eye
could see. As they moved towards
us, Youwarkee and I having flood still
some time, moved slowly forward, to
meet them.

It would have surprized you to have
seen the deference they paid us; and I
believe the guards took us for some-
thing above the mortal race. Youwar-
kee threw no part of her grandee,
having on sleeves down to her wrists,
white silk stockings, and red-heeled
shoes; so that none of them knew her
for one of them.

The first that we met was my bro-
ther, to whom we had only an oppor-
tunity of paying our compliments, en
passeant, before another grandee came
up, who was succeeded by another and
another, to the number of thirty;
some out of respect to my father and
brother, and some out of mere curio-
sity to see me; and as fast as each had
paid his salutes, he passed us, till we
found we had no more to meet; when
we turned about, and fell in with the
company.

When we came to the grotto, I was
very much put to it for room, we
scarce being able to stand upright by
each
each other; much less to sit down; which my father perceiving, 'My dear
friends,' says he, 'had my fon known
in time of so much good company,
he would have been better provided
with feats for us all; but, consider-
ing all we see is the labour only of
his own hands, we should rather ad-
mire at the many conveniences we
see here, than be uneasy there are no
core.—And, son,' says he, 'as we
are now fo large a body, I propose
that we adjourn to the officers quar-
ters, and let them take ours.' I re-
turned my father thanks for the hint,
and led the way, the rest following;
where we found room enough, and to
spare.

Though Youwarke was with us all
dinner-time helping the guests, we had
no sooner done, 'But,' says Quang-
gollart, aloud, 'brother Peter, are we
not to see my fitter?' I not hearing
perfectly what he said, though I per-
ceived he spoke to me, 'Sir!' says I.
'My fitter Youwarke!' says he, 'why
won't the appear? Here are several
of her good friends, as well as my-
selt; will be glad to see her.' My
father then laughed so heartily, that
the rest taking notice of it, my poor
brother was put to the blush. 'Son,'
says my father, 'don't you know your
own fitter?'—'We have not seen her
yet,' says one of the columbs, 'or
any lady but your daughter Hally-
carrie and that attendant.' My bro-
ther then seeing how it was, came up
to salute my wife; but even then had
his scruples, till he saw her smile; and
then begged pardon for his oversight,
as did all the columbs upon saluting
her: my brother declaring, that as he
was somewhat behind me on the level,
he had only paid her the respect of his
chin, taking her for some one attending
me. The colamb following my bro-
ther, affured her the little regard shown
her by Quangollart, who he thought
should know best where to bestow his
respect, was the reason of his taking
no more notice of her; and each con-
fecling his mistake arose from too
nearly copying the steps of his imme-
diate predecessor, they all made excuse,
and the mistake made us very merry,
till they proposed taking a turn in the
woods, it being a great novelty to them,
they said; but I begged they would
leave me behind to prepare for their
return.

Having refreshed themselves after
ty came home, Quangollart (being
put upon it, by some of the colombs)
told me I could not render a more ac-
ceptable favour to the whole company
than to relate to them an account of
my adventures: 'For though,' says
he, 'I told them last night what I re-
membered to have heard from you,
yet the variety was so great I could
not deliver the facts in order as I
heard them, but was obliged to take
here a piece, and there another, as
they occurred to me, making rather
several stories of it than a continued
series of facts.'

All the colombs immediately second-
ed the motion, and desired me to be-

ning. I then ordering a clear table and
a bowl of punch, and having drank
all the company's healths, began my
narration, hoping to have finished it
before bed-time; but they prefiguring me
to be very particular, and frequently
one or other requiring explanations
upon particular facts, and then one
making a remark upon something,
which another answered, and a third
replied to, they got the talk out of
my hands too long, that having lost
themselves in the argument, and for-
got what I said last; they begged my
pardon, and desired me to go on;
when one, who in contemplation of
one fact had left part of another, prayed me to go on from such an in-
cident, and another from one before
that, so that I was frequently obliged
to begin half-way back again. This
method not only spurn out my flory to
a very great length; but, instead of it's
being finished that evening, as I had
purposed, it was scarce well begun
before bed-time drew on: so I just hav-
ing brought them to Angola, told them,
as it grew late, if they pleased, I would
finish the remainder next night, which
they agreed to.

Quangollart then asked my father
if he had been fishing since he came;
but he told him he knew not what he
meant. Then all the company desired
I would shew them what that was. I
told them they might command me as
they pleased; so we appointed the next
morning for that exercise. 'But, gen-
tlemen,' says I, 'your lodging to-

night
night gives me the greatest pain: for

I know not what I shall do about

that. I have, a few beast-fish skins,

which are very soft and hairy, but

not a sufficiency for so many friends

as I would at present be proud to

oblige; but I can lay them as far as

they will go upon as much dry reeds

and grafts as you please.' I then

sent a servant to Youwarkee for the

skins; after which, they one and all

crying out if they had but good dry

reeds they desired no better lodging, I

dispatched hands to bring away a large

parcel of them to the tent, which they

did in a trice. Then waiting on those

few who lay at the grotto to their quar-
ters, and having sent Youwarkee to

her sister, I returned to the tent to take

up my own lodging with those I had

left there.

I had not yet entered the tent, when

I heard a perfect tumult within, every

one talking so loud, and all together,

that I verily thought they had fallen

out, and were going to handy-cuffs;

however, I resolved to go in amongst

them, and try to compose their differ-
ence; when just entering, and they

flying me, several ran to me, with

each a skin in his hand; the rest fol-

lowing as fast as they could. 'Gen-
tlemen,' says I, 'I hoped to have

found you all at rest.'—'So we

should have been,' says one of them,

but for these, what you call 'ems.'—

'It is my unspokenable misfortune,'
says I, 'that I have no more at your

service, and am sorry I should cause

them to be brought, since each of

them can have one.' Says one of

them, 'I don't want one, I have seen

enough of it.'—'Then, gentlemen,
says I, 'it is possible there may be so

many more of that colamb's mind,

that there may be sufficient for those

who desire them.' They neither

knew what to make of me, nor I of

them, all this while; till an old col-

amb perceiving our mistake, 'Mr.

Peter,' says he, 'we have only had

a dispute.'—'I am sorry at my heart

for it,' says I; 'but I perceived you

were very warm before I entered,

and am in great hopes of compro-
mising matters to all your satisfac-
tions.'—'I was going,' says the

same colamb, 'to tell you we had a

dispute about what these things were,

nothing else.' I was then struck on

a heap, being quite ashamed they should

think I meddled they had been quar-
relling for the skins; and how to come

off I knew not. 'You'll excuse me,

Sir,' says I, 'for expressing a con-

cern that you could not each have

one to examine into at the same time,

that one of you need not have wait-
ed to make your remarks, till the

other had done.'—No occasion, no

occasion for that, Mr. Peter,' said

they all together; 'we shall have leis-
ure enough to examine them to-
morrow; but we want to know what

they are, and where they grow.'—

'Gentlemen,' says I, 'each of these

is the clothing of a particular fish.'

—and where do they grow?' said they.

'In the lake,' says I; 'they are a liv-
ing creature, who inhabit that great

water; I often catch them when I am

fishing; the same exercise we shall go

upon to-morrow.'

I had much ado to persuade them

they did not grow on trees, which I

was then much more surprized at

than some time after, that I returned

their visit; but having satisfied them,

and given them some possible hopes

they might see one alive next day, they

were very well contented, and we all

lay down to rest.

C H A P. V.

GO A FISHING—CATCH A BEAST-

FISH—AFRAID OF THE GUN

HOW PETER ALTERED HIS NET—

FISH-DINNER FOR THE GUARDS

—METHO D. OF DRESSING AND

EATING IT.

I Appeared before them, in the morn-
ing, in my old jacket, and an old

hat with brims indented almost to the

crown, a flannel night-cap, and

chequered shirt. 'How now, son!' says my father, 'what have we here?'—

'Sir,' says I, 'this will shew you the

use of our English fashion I mentioned

the other day, and the necessity of

it. You see me in this indifferent

habit, because my next business re-

quires it; but when I come back,

and have no farther dirty work to

do, I shall then dress, as near as I

can, to qualify me for your com-
pany.'
"Are you for moving gentlemen?" says my brother; "I believe it is time:" they then all arising, we went to the lake; where getting into my boat, and telling them, that any six of them might go with me, they never having seen such a thing before, and not much liking the looks of it, all made excuses; till my brother, affuring them it was very safe, and that he had failed in it the last trip, three or four of them, with my father, and Hally-carnie, who was very dextrous of fishing me fish, got in; and we failed a great way up the lake, taking my gun as usual with me.

It gave me exceeding delight, to see the whole body of the people then in the arke on the grandee; some hovering over our heads, and talking with us; others flying this way, others that, till I had pitched upon a spot to begin my operation; when rowing to shore, and quitting my boat, the whole body of people settled just by me, staring at me and my net, and wondering what I was doing. I then taking a sweep as usual, got some of the soldiers to assist me to shore with it; but when the cod of the net landed, and the fish began to dash with their tails at the water's edge, away ran all my soldiers, frightened out of their wits to think what was coming; but it being a large hale, and a shelving bank, I could not lift it to the level myself; which my brother, who had seen the sport before, perceiving, though not one of the rest stirred, lent me a hand, and we got it up.

You cannot imagine what surprize appeared in every face upon opening the net, and seeing all the fish naked: they drew up by degrees closer and closer, for I let the fish lie some time for their observation; but seeing the large fish, upon my handling them, flap their tails, they very expeditiously retired again. I then toffed several of them into the boat; but two of them being very large, and rough-scaled ugly fish, I did not think I could lift them myself, so desired assistance, but nobody stirred; I expected some of the collaborators would have ordered their men to have helped me, but they were so terrified with seeing me handle them, that they could not have the confidence to order their men on so severe a duty, till a common man came to me, and taking the tail, and I the head, we toffed them both into the boat.

I went higher up the lake than usual, in hopes of a beef-fish to steer them; but, though I could not meet with one, I had several very great hawls, and took three or four of my lobbies, very large ones. This was the second trial I had made of my net since I had altered it, and gave me great satisfaction, for I could now take as many fish at one draught as I could before have done at ten; I had found, that though my net was very long, yet for want of a bag, or cod to inclose the fish, many that were included within it's compass would, whilst I drew round, swim to the extremes, and so get out, for want of some inlet to enter at; for which reason I fawed off the top of a tree at about ten feet from the ground, and drawing a circle of six feet diameter round the tree, on the ground, I stuck it round with small pegs, at two inches distance; then I drove the like number of nails round the top of the trunk of the tree, and straining a length of mat-line from each peg on the ground to a correspondent nail on the tree, I tied my mat-line in circles round the strained lines, from top to bottom, about two inches distance at the bottom, but at a less distance where the strained lines grew nearer to each other towards the top; and having secured all the ends, by some line twisted round them, I cut a hole in the middle of my net, and tied the large ground-end over the hole in the net, and gathered the small end up in a purse, tying it up tight; and by this means I now scarce lost any fish which once were within the sweep of my net.

Having had so good success, I had a design of returning, but thought, as I could now so easily entertain a multitude, I might as well take another hawl or two, and make an handy some treat for the soldiers; then coming up to my drill's mouth, I fixed my implements for a draught there, and beginning to draw up, I found great resistance in the net, and got two or three to help me; but, coming near shore, when the company saw the net tumble and roll, and rise and fall, they all ran as if they were mad, till I called them, and told the collaborators it was only one of the fish whose skins I had shown them; upon which, by that time I had discharged
discharged the fish from the net, they were all round me again: but no sooner had he got loose, than up he rose, whirled his wings, and at the same instant uttered such a groan that my whole company retreated again, thinking me somewhat more than a man, who could face so dreadful an enemy. I entreated them to come and view it; but finding no arguments could bring them nearer, I edged round till I got him between me and the water, and shot him dead.

Upon the report of my gun, the whole field was in the air, darting and screaming, as I have often seen a flight of rooks do on the same occasion; and I am apt to believe some of them never returned again, but went directly home.

I was a little concerned to see the confusion I had caused; and laying down my gun, my brother, who though at a distance when I shot, knowing what I was at, and coming up to me, it put the rest upon their consideration; and they alighted one by one, at a distance, till they were all on the level again.

My father and the columbs, who were the first that directed approach, wondered what I had done, and how the fish came to be dead, and whence so much fire and smoke proceeded, for they were sure I brought none with me, and asked me abundance of questions; but as I knew I must have occasion for answering to the same thing twenty times over, had I entered upon an explanation there, I deferred giving them satisfaction till we came home; when all at once might be capable of hearing what was said. So I told them the most necessary thing at present was to lower the fish in the boat; for it was the largest I had ever taken, and I could not wholly do it myself. I made several efforts for help, but in vain, till the same soldier who had helped me with one of the first fish, came to my relief, and, deferring my orders what to do, affiated me; and the rest seeing the difficulty we both had to manage it, one or two more of them came up, and we shipped it on board.

Then called the columbs to me, telling I was sorry I had given such a general disturbance to them, by shooting the fish; but, as they kept at too great a distance from me to have notice of my design, and if I had fol-
ed very good diversion at it, I invited the company to go see it, telling them, in my opinion, it would exceed the sport in taking them. We passed through the wood till we came amongst the shrubs, where I placed them to be out of harm's way; and the fire, which was now nothing but cinders, was of no inconvenience to them. They were pleased with it to perfection; for, first, the six men who walked round the fires, by the glowing light of the embers, and the shining of their greaves, looked like men on fire; then, to see each fire surrounded with a circle of men at the diameter of near two hundred paces, as close as they could well stand, by a more distant shine of the fire, had a very pleasing effect; but, when the boilers began to throw the fish about, (for each man fowed with some salt and a cut of bread in his hand) to see a body of an hundred men running for it, and whilst they were flapping and scrambling for that, to see a hot fish fall on the back of one, which was whipped off by another, who, shaking his mouth with it, threw it in the face of a third; when a fourth, fifth, and sixth, pulling it in pieces, ran away with it; and to see the different postures, courtes, and groupes, during this exerise and running-feast, was the most agreeable farce my guests had ever seen in their lives; and, to the great saving of my liquors, kept us in the wood for full three hours, not a soul stirring till the feast was over.

We spent best part of this evening in discours on the passages of the day, the reflections on which not being concluded till bed-time, my adventures were postponed till the next night; but we had first concluded upon a shooting for the next morning, (for they were all extremely desirous of knowing how I did it) at a time they should have opportunity of seeing me and making remarks; and I, being unwilling they should think me a conjuror, agreed to make them matters of part of the mystery of powder and ball.

CHAP. VI.

A SHOOTING PROPOSED—ALL AFRAID OF THE GUN BUT ONE PRIVATE GUARD—HIS BEHAVIOR—
THIS being the fifth morning, I cleaned up my best gun, and prepared my balls, and we all took a walk towards the bridge; every one admiring my gun as we went; but I could get none of them to carry it, and we had at least five hundred questions proposed about it. I told them they need not be afraid of it, for it was only wood and iron, but they knew nothing of iron. I then shewed them how I made it give fire, by snapping the cock; they thought it was very strange. I then put a little powder in the pan, and made it flash, and shewing them the empty pan, they would not be persuaded but I had taken away the powder before the flash, or else, they said, it was impossible that should be all gone upon flashing only; for they said it was a little nut, using the same word to express both nut and seed. I then desired one of them to put in some powder, and snap it himself; but having prevailed with him to try the experiment, if I had not through caution held my hand upon the barrel, the gun had been on the ground, for the moment it flashed, he let go and ran for it.

I had a great inclination to gain the better of their prejudices, and used abundance of arguments to prove the gun as innocent a thing as a twig I took up; and that it was the powder which, when set on fire, the flame thereof wanting more room than the powder itself did, forced itself, and all that opposed it, out of the mouth of the gun with such fury as to make the noise they heard; and being just come to the rock, 'Now,' says I, 'you shall see that which I tell you is true.' They told me they desired nothing more than that I would make them understand it, for it was the strangest thing they had ever seen. 'Well, then,' says I, 'observe; I put in this much powder only, and with this rag I stop it down close. Now,' says I, 'you see by the length of this flick that the rag and powder take up the space only of a finger's depth on the inside of the gun.' They saw that plainly they said; 'But how could that kill any thing?'—'Now look again,' says I; 'I put in a little more powder, as I did before when I made a flash, and you see there is a little hole from this powder through the side of the gun to the powder within. Do you observe that this communicates with that through this hole?'—'Yes,' they said, they did. 'Now,' says I, when I put fire to this, it sets fire to that within, which fire turning to flame, and wanting room, bursts out at the mouth of the gun; and so shew you with what force it comes out, here handle this round ball,' giving them a bullet to handle; 'you feel how heavy it is: now, can any of you throw this ball as far as that rock?' for I stood a good hundred paces from it. They told me, 'No.'—'And don't you think,' says I, 'that if the force of the fire made by this powder can throw this ball to that rock, that force must be very great?' They said, they thought it must, but believed it to be impossible. 'But,' says I, 'it if it not only throws it to the rock, but beats out a piece of the stone, must not that be much more violent?' They agreed it must. Then putting in the ball, 'Now,' says I, 'we will try.' I then ordered one to daub a part of the rock, about two feet high, with some mud, and first to observe about it, if the rock was any where fresh broken or not; who, returning, reported that the rock was all of a colour and sound, but some what rugged all about the mud. 'Did you lay the mud on smooth?' says I. He replied, 'Yes.' Then lifting up my gun, I perceived they were creeping off; so I took it down again, and calling, reasoned with them upon their fears. 'What mischief,' says I, 'can you apprehend from this gun in my hand? Should I be able to hurt you with it, are you not all my friends or relations, could I be willing to do it? If the gun of itself could hurt, would I handle it as I do? For shame! be more courageous, rouze your reason, and stand by me; I shall take care not to hurt you. It looks as if you mistrusted my love to you, for this gun can do nothing but what I direct it to.'

By such like persuasions, rough and smooth, I prevailed upon the major part
part of the colombs and officers to stand near me to see me fire, and then I shot; but though my words had engaged them to stand it, I had no sooner snapped but the grundees flew all open, though they closed again immediately; and then we fell to question and answer again. I defined them to walk to the rock; and sent the person who put up the mark before, to see and shew us exactly what alteration there was: he told us there was a round hole in the mud, pointing to it, which he did not leave there, and taking away the mud, a thick shiver of the rock followed it. They then all agreed, that the ball must have made both the hole in the mud and also splintered the rock; and flood in amaze at it, not being able to comprehend it: but, by all the art I had, I could not prevail with a man of them to fire the gun himself, till it had been buzzed about a good while, and at last came to my ears, that a common soldier behind said he should not be afraid of it, if the gentleman would shew him how.

I then ordered the fellow to me, and he told me, with a composed look, that it had always been his way of thinking, that what he saw another do he could do himself, and could not rest till he had tried. 'And, Sir,' says he, 'if this gun, as you call it, does not hurt you, why should it hurt me? And if you can make it hit that rock, why should not I, when you have told me how you manage it?'—'Are not you the man that first helped me up with the large fish yesterday?' says I. He told me, he was.

I was prodigiously pleased with the fellow's spirit. 'And,' says I, 'my friend, if you will, and I live, you shall hit it before you have done.' I then shewed him the sight of the gun, and how to hold it; and being perfect in that, 'Now,' says I, 'hit your left eye, and observe with your right, till this knob, and that notch, are exactly even with each other and the middle of that mark; and when they are so, pull this bit with your fore-finger, holding the gun tight to your shoulder.' He so exactly pursued my directions, that he hit the very middle of the mud: and then, without any emotion, walked up with the gun in his hand, as I had done before; and turning to me, very gravely, 'Sir,' says he, 'it is hit.' I told him the best marksman on earth could not be sure of coming so near his mark. He stroaked his chin, and giving me the gun again, was walking to his place; but I stopped him, and seeing something so modest and sincere in his countenance and behaviour, and so generous in his spirit, I asked him to which colomb he belonged. He told me to Columb Pendlehamby. 'To my father?' says I; 'then sure I shall not be denied.'

I took him with me to my father, who was not yet come up to the rock. 'Sir,' says I, 'there is a favour I would beg of you.'—'Son,' says he, 'what is it you can ask that I can refuse you?' Says I, 'This man belongs to your guards; now there is something so noble and daring in his spirit, and yet so meek and deserving in his deportment, that if you will load me with obligation, it is to make him an officer; he is not deserving of so ill a station as a private man.'

My father looking at me, 'Son,' says he, 'there is something to be done before he can be qualified for what you require.'—'This,' thinks I, 'is a put-off.—Pray, Sir,' says I, 'what can a man of courage, sense, and a cool temper, want to qualify him for what I ask?'—'Something,' says he, 'which none but myself can give; and that, at your desire, I will supply him with.' Then, my father calling him, 'Lafk Nafigg, bonyoe,' says he, that is, Slave Nafigg, liedown.' Nafigg (for that was his name) immediately fell on his face, with his arms and hands straight by his sides; when my father, lifting his left-foot on Nafigg's neck, pronounced these words: 'Lafk, I give thee life, thou art a filgay!' Then Nafigg, raising-himself on his knees, made obeisance to my father, and standing up, stroaked his chin; and my father taking him by the hand, in token of equality, the ceremony ceased.

'Now, son,' says my father, 'let me hear your request?'—'It is only,' says I, 'preferment for the deserving, equal to his merit.' My father asked him if he understood the duty of a gorpell. He did not reply yes,
yes, but beginning, gave a compendious sort of history of his whole duty; at which, all the colums were very much surprized, for even his comrades were not apprized, or ever imagined, he knew more of military affairs than themselves. My father then asked him, if he knew how to behave as a cluff; but he made little difficulty of that as the other, going through the several parts of duty in all the different branches, in peace and war, at home and abroad. 'Son,' says my father, 'it is a mystery to me, you should have found out more in an hour, than I myself could in half an age; for this man was born in my palæ, of my own falk, and has been mine, and my father's, these forty years. I shall be glad if you will look on the rest of my falks, and give me your opinion; I may have more as deferving.' I told him, such as Nafigg were not to be met with very often; and when they were found, ought to be cherished accordingly.

'Sir,' says I, 'nature works upon the same sort of materials divers ways; on some in sport, and some in earnest; and if the necessary qualifications of a great man are impreffed on our mafs, it is odds but we improve regularly into one, though it may never be publicly known, or even to ourselves, till a proper occasion: for as a curious genius will be moft inquisitive after, and is moft an end retentive of knowledge, so no man is less onslaughts of it. He covets knowledge, not from the prospect of gain, but merely for it's own fake; the very knowing, being his recompence: and if I may presume to give you a hint, how properly to beftow your favours, let it be on persons like this; for the vain, knowing man, who is always shewing it, as he for the most part labours for it, to shew out with, and procure his rife by it, were it not for the hopes of that, would not think knowledge worth attaining; and as his rife is his aim, if he could invent any more expeditious method than that, he would not preterm any ill act, that might advance him according to his luft of rising. But the man who aims at perfection, from his natural inclination, must, to attain his end, avoid all ill courses, as impediments to that perfection he lufts after: and that, by Nafigg's worth being fo little known, I'll answer for it is his character. And this being true, yourself will deduce the conquence, which is the fitter man to bear place; for with me it is a maxim, he that labours after truth for truth's fake, (and that he surely must who proposeth no worldly view in it) can't arrive at his ends by false methods; but is always the truest friend to himself and others, the truiftic fubject to his lord, and the most faithful fervant to his God.'

My father then turning to me, 'Son,' says he, 'you have enlighten- ed me more than ever I was before, and have put me on a new way of thinking; for which I am to return you many thanks.' And the whole company doing the fame; says my father, 'I left a brave general officer lately, who was defined to the western wars, which are breaking out, and have been long debating in my mind, to whom I should commit his corps; and, but for the hazard of the enterprize, I would have now given it to Nafigg; but shall be both to lose him so soon after I am ac- quainted with his worth; so will think of some other poft nearer my person for him, less dangerous, though perhaps not fo honourable.'

'Sir,' says Nafigg, 'I am too fensible of the honour already done me, to think any poft wherein I may continue to serve you either too mean or too hazardous for me; and as valour is no where so confpi- cuous as in the greatest dangers, I shall esteem my blood spent to great advantage in any enterprize where my duty under your command leads me: I therefore the rather humbly request this dangerous poft, that I may either lose my life in your ser- vice, or live to see you justified in your advancement of me by the whole nation. For what can I do, or how can I demonstrate my af- fection to your person and pleasure, in an inactive state?'

Here the whole level rang with ap- plause to Nafigg. My father then giving his hand to Nafigg, in token of friendship, and
his word for investiture in the command of that vacant post, the whole level again refound with, *Long live Pendlehamby; and his servant Nafig!*

This being the last day of my company's stay, for they had agreed to go homewards next morning, some of them moved to return the sooner, that they might have time to hear out my story. So that our stay was very little longer.

In our return home, Nafig fangled me out, to return his acknowledgments for my favour; and, viewing my gun, told me, they had no such thing growing in his country. I told him, if he had it, it would do no good without my powder. I then, at his request, described what I had heard of our method of fighting in battle in Europe; and mentioning our cannon, he said, he supposed they killed every man they hit. *'No,' says I, 'not so bad as that; sometimes they hit the flesh only, and that is commonly cured; sometimes break a leg or arm, and that may in time be made good again; and others are cut off, and healed up again; but if the ball hits the head or vitals, it is commonly mortal.' *'Oh,' says he, 'give me the head or vitals, then; no broken limbs for me.'*

After dinner, at their request, I went on with my story, at repairing the caiile, and my escape with Glandipé, and so on to the crocodile; when I repeated his speech to me on that account, and told them it had made such an impression upon me that I had endeavoured to make it the leading thought of my mind, and had let it down upon one of my doors at the grotto, that it might the offender be in my fight when any difficulty arose.

One of the colombs begged pardon for interrupting, but told me, though he understood what Glandipé meant, he could not tell how I could fet what he said down at my grotto, or have it in my fight; and desired me to explain that. I would have told my guest I took it down in writing, if that would not have puzzled the cause more; but, to go the nearest way I could, I told him, we had a method in my country, of conveying to a man at a great distance whatever we have a mind to say to him; and in such a manner, that nobody but himself would know what we would have him know. And passing here a little, to consider the safest method of demonstrating this to their fenfes, they told me they had gone as far as their conjectures could carry them, but could conclude on nothing so probable as sending it by a messenger. I told them, that in part was my way; but my messenger should not know the message he carried. That gravelled them quite, and they were unanimous that what could not be done. By this time I had sent for a wood-coal, to write upon my deal-table; and kneeling down to the table, I began to write, *Honoured Sir, I send this to gain by your answer to it an account of your arrival at Arndrumnfitake.* Then called them all to me: *'Now,' says I, *'suppose I want to know how my father gets back to Arndrumnfitake, my way is this: I set down so many words as will express my meaning to my father, after the manner you see on this table, and make a little distance between each word, which is the same thing as you do in speaking; for there, if you run one word into another, and do not give each it's proper sound, who can understand you? For though you speak what contains all the words, yet, without the proper sound and distinction, it is only confusion. Do you understand that?' They told me they did. *'Then,' says I, *'these are the words I would have my father know, I being at this arks he, and he at Arndrumnfitake; *'Honoured Sir,' and so I read on; here,' says I, *'you must take us to be countrymen, and that he and I understand both the same method. Now look, this word, which ends where you see the gap, stands for honoured, and this next for Sir, the next for I; and so on; and we both using the same method, and seeing each other's words, are able to open our minds at a distance.' I was now in hopes I had done, and was going on with my story; but, says one of the colombs, *'Mr. Peter, though this is a matter that requires consideration, I plainly see how you do it, by agreeing that all these strokes, put into this form, shall stand for the word honoured, and so on, as you say, let who will make them; but have not*
not you let down there the word 
'Arndrum flask'—'Yes,' says I. 
Why then,' says he, 'none of your 
countrymen could understand what 
that means.'—'No!' says I, smiling; 
'but they could!' Says he, 
You say, you agree what strokes 
shall stand for one word, and what 
for another; but then, how could 
your countryman, who never knew 
what strokes you would set down for 
'Arndrum flask, know that your 
strokes meant that very country? 
for that you could not have agreed 
upon before either of you knew there 
was any such place.' 
I was at a loss, without spending 
more words than I was willing about it, 
how to answer this close reasoner; 
and talking of syllables and letters 
would only have perplexed the affair 
more, so I told him the readiest for 
dispatch; that as every word consisted 
of one or more distinct sounds, and as 
some of the same sounds happened in 
different words, we did not agree so 
much upon; making our strokes stand 
for several sounds, as for several sounds; 
and those sounds, more or less of them, 
added together, made the particular 
words. 'As for example,' says I, 
'Arn is one sound, drum another 
found, and flake is another; now, 
by our knowing how to set down 
these several sounds by themselves, 
we can couple them, and apply them 
to the making up any word, in the 
manner we please; and therefore he, 
by seeing those three sounds together, 
knows I mean Arndrum flask, and 
can speak it as well, though he never 
heard the whole word spoken to 
gether, as if he heard me speak to 
him.'—'I have some little notion of 
what you mean,' says he, 'but not 
clear enough to express myself upon 
it; and so, go on! go on! And pray 
what did you do about the reeds?' 

I then resuming my discourse where 
I left off, completed my narration that 
night; but I could perceive the water 
in my father's eyes, when I came to the 
account of Youwarkee's fall, and 
the condition I took her up in. 
When I had done, they adjusted the 
order of their flight; for avoiding con- 
fusion, one to go so long before anoth- 
ner, and the junior coloms to go 
first. 

In the morning nothing was to be 
heard but the gripfacks; the men were 
all ranged in order to go off with their 
respective colams; and after all compli-
ments passed, the junior colamb 
aring, walked half way to the wood, 
where his gripfack standing to wait 
for him, preceded him to the level, 
the next gripfack standing ready to 
found as soon as the first removed; and 
this was the signal for the second col-
amb to move; so that each colamb was 
a quarter of a mile before the other. 
My father was the last but two; but 
I shall never forget his tendernefs at 
parting with his daughter and grand-
children, and I may say with myself too; for by this time he had a high 
opinion of me. Patty went with my 
father, she so much resembling my 
wife, that my father said, he should 
still have his two daughters in his sight, 
having her with him. 

At parting, I presented Nafgig with a 
broad-sword; and, shewing him the 
use of it, with many expressions of 
gratitude on his part, and respect on 
mine, he took flight after the rest. 

C H A P. VII. 

PETER FINDS HIS STORES LOW— 
SENDS YOUWARKEE TO THE SHIP— 
RECEIVES AN INVITATION TO 
GEORGETTI'S COURT. 

FOR the first few days after our 
company had left us, Youwarkee 
could not forbear a tear now and then 
for the loss of her father and sister; 
but I endeavoured not to see it, left I 
should, by perfuming her to the con-
trary, seem to oppose what I really 
thought was a farther token of the 
sweetness of her disposition; but it 
were off by degrees, and having a 
clear stage again, it cost us several days 
to settle ourselves, and put our con- 
fused affairs in order; and when we 
had done, we blesfed ourselves that we 
could come and go, and converse with 
the pleasing tenderness we had hitherto 
always done. 

She told me, nothing in the world 
but her concern for so tender a father, 
and the fear of displeasing me if she 
disobliged him, should have kept her 
so long from me; for her life had nev- 
er been so sweet and serene as with 
me and her children; and if she was
to begin it again, and chuse her settle-
ment and company, it should be with
me in that arkoe. I told her, though
I was entirely of her opinion for avoid-
ing a life of hurry, yet I loved a little
company, if for nothing else but to
advance topicks for discourse, to the
exercise of our faculties; but I then
agreed, it was not from mere judg-
ment I spoke, but from fancy. 'But,
' Youwee,' says I, 'it will be proper
for us to see what our friends have
left us, that we don't want before
the time comes about again.' Then
she took her part, and I mine; and
having finished, we found they would
hold out pretty well, and that the first
thing to be done, was to get the oil of
the heart-fish.

When we came to examine the
brandy and wine, I found they had
suffered greatly; so I told Youwarkee,
when she could spare time, she should
make another flight to the ship; 'And,'
says I, 'pray look at all the small
casks of wine or brandy, or be they
what they will, if they are not above
half full, or thereabouts, they will
swim, and you may send them
down.' I defired her to fend a fire
shovel and tongs, describing them to
her; 'And there are abundance of
good ropes between decks, rolled
up, send them,' says I, 'and any
thing else you think we want, as
plates, bowls, and all the cutlaffes
and piftols,' says I, 'that hang in
the room by the cabin: for I
would, methinks, have another car-
go, as it may possibly be the last; for
the ship can't hold for ever.'

Youwarkee, who loved a jaunt to
the ship mightily, sat very attentive to
what I said, and told me, if I pleased,
she would go the next day; to which
I agreed.

She stayed on this trip till I began
to be uneasy for her, being gone al-
most four days, and I was in great fear
of some accident; but she arrived safe,
telling me, she had sent all she could
any ways pack up; and any one who
had seen the arrival of her fleet would
have taken it for a good ship's cargo,
for it cost me full three weeks to land
and draw them up to the grotto: and
then we had such a redundancy of
things, that we were forced to pile
them upon each other, to the top of
the room.

It began to draw towards long days
again, when one morning, in bed, I
heard the gripack. I waked You-
warkee, and told her of it; and we
both got up, and were going to the
level, when we met six glumms in
the wood, with a gripack before them,
coming to the grotto. The Trumpeter,
it seems, had been there before; but the
others, who seemed to be of a better
rank, had not. We saluted them, and
they us; and Youwarkee knowing one
of them, we desired them to walk to
the grotto.

They told us, they came express
from Georgietti's palace, with an in-
vitation to me and Youwarkee to spend
some time at his court. I let them
know what a misfortune I lay under
in not being born with a grandee,
and Providence had pleased to dispofe
of me in a part of the world where
alone it could have been of such in-
finitive service to me; or I should have
taken it for the highest honour to have
paid myself at their matter's feet; and
after some other discourse, one of them
pressed me to return his matter my an-
swer; for they had but a very little
time to stay. I told them, they saw
plainly, by bareing my breast to them,
that I was under an absolute incapacity
for such a journey, and gratifying the
highest ambition I could have in
the world; for I was pinned down to my
arkoe, never more to pass the barrier of
that rock. One of them then asking,
if I should chuse to go, if it was pos-
sible to convey me thither, I told him,
he could scarce have the least doubt,
was my ability to perform such a jour-
ney equal to my inclination to take it,
that I should in the least hesitate at
obeying his matter. 'Sir,' says he,
'you make me very happy, in the re-
gard you shew my matter; and I must
beg leave to stay another day with
you.' I told him, they did me great
honour; but little thought what it all
tended to.

We were very facetious; and they
talked of the number of visitors I had
had here; and they mentioned several facts
which had happened, and, amongst the
rest, that of Naigig, who they said, since
his return, had been introduced by Pen-
delhamby to the king, and was for his
great prudence and penetration become
Georgietti's great favourite. They
told me war was upon the point of
breaking
breaking out, and several other pieces of news, which, as they did not concern me, I was very easy about.

The next morning they desiring to walk, and view what was most remarkable in my arke, and above all to see me fire my gun, which they had heard so much of; I gratified them at a mark, and hit the edge of it, and found them quite staunch, without the least start at the report. I paid them a compliment upon it, and told them how their countrymen had behaved, even at a second firing: 'But,' says he, who was the chief spokesman, and knew, I found, as much as I could tell him, that second fright was from seeing death the consequence of the first; and though you had then to do mostly with soldiers, you must not think they chose death more than others, though their duty obliges them to shun it less.'

The fame person then desired me to shew him how to fire the gun; which I did, and believe he might hit the rock somewhere or other; but he did not seem to admire the sport, and I having but few balls left, did not recommend the gun to the reft.

A little before bed-time, the strangers told me, they believed I should see Nafigg next morning. I presently thought there was somewhat more than ordinary in this visit; but could no ways dive to the bottom of it.

Just before they went to rest, they ordered the trumpeter to be early on the rock next morning; and upon the first sight of Nafigg's corps, to found notice of it, for us to be ready to receive him.

CHAP. VIII.

Nafigg Comes With a Guard to Fetch Peter—Long Debate About His Going—Nafigg's Un easiness at Peter's Refus al—Relates a Predic tion to Him, and Proceedings Thereon at Georigetti's Court—Peter Consents to Go—Prepares a Machine for That Purpose.

We were waked by the trumpet giving notice of Nafigg's coming; I did not care to enquire of the strangers into the particulars of his embasssy; 'For be it what it will,' thinks I, 'Nafigg is so much my friend that I can know the motives of it from him, and, or I am much deceived, he is too honest to impose upon me.' But I had but little time for thought, for upon our entering the level, we found him and his train, of at least an hundred persons, just alighting before us.

We embraced, and professed the particular pleasure fortune had done us in once more meeting together. When we arrived at the grotto, he told me he was assured I had been informed of the occasion of his visit; and that it would be the greatest honour done to his country that could be imagined. He then laid his hand on my beard, which was now of about five months growth, having never shaved it since my father went, and told me he was glad to see that. 'And are you not to fee me?' says I. 'Yes, surely,' says he, 'for I prize that for your face.'—But, says I, 'pray be open with me, and tell me what you mean by my being informed of the occasion of your coming?'—'Why,' says he, 'of Georigetti's message to you; as it will be of such infinite service to our country; and,' says he, 'if you had not confined to it, the messengers had returned and stopped me.'—'True,' says I, 'one of the messengers told me the king would be glad to see me; which as I, so well as he, knew it was impossible he should, in return to his compliment, I believe I might say, what happiness it would be to me if I could wait on him. But pray what is your immediate message; for I hear you are in great favour at court, and would never have come hither with this return in so much ceremony on a trifling account?'

'My dear Peter,' says Nafigg, know that your fame has reached far and near since I saw you before; and our state, though a large and populous one, and once of mighty power and twice it's present extant, by the revolt of the western part of it, who chose themselves a king, has been to a miserably harassed by wars, that the revolters, who are ever fomenting discontent and rebellion amongst us, will by the encroachments they daily make...
make on us, certainly reduce us at
left to a province under their govern-
ment; which will render us all flies
of an usurped power, set up against
our lawful sovereign. Now these
things were foretold long enough be-
fore they actually began to be tran-
scended; but all being then at peace,
and no prospect of what has since
happened, we looked not out for a
remedy, till the disease became stub-
born and incurable.—* Pray,* says
I, * by whom were the things you
mention foretold?*—* By a very an-
cient and grave ragan,* says he.
How long ago,* says I?—* O, above
time of the age of the oldest man
living,* says he. *And when did*
his *say it would happen,* says I?
That,* says he, *was not quite so
clear then.*—*But how do you know,*
says I, *that he ever said any such
thing?*—*Why the thing itself was
so peculiar,* says he, *and the ra-
gan delivered it so positively, that his
successors have ever since pronounced
it twenty times a year publicly, word
for word, to put the people in mind
of it, and from whom they must hope
for relief; and now the long expect-
ted time being come, we have no
hopes but in your destruction of the
tyrant-usurer.*—* I destroy him!*
says I: *if he is not destroyed till I do
it, I fear your fate is but in a bad
cafe.*—*My good friend Peter,* says
he, *you or nobody can do it.*—
Pugh,* says I, *Nafgig, I took you
for a man of more sense, notwith-
standing the prejudices of education,
than to think, because you have seen
me kill a beast which that could not
come to hurt me, at the distance of
twenty paces, that I can kill your
usurer at the distance he is from me.*
—* No, my good friend,* says Naf-
gig, *I know you take me to have
more judgment than to think so.*—
Why, what else can I do?* says I,
unless he will come hither to be kill-
ed by me.—* Dear Peter,* says he,
you will not hear me out.—* I will,*
says I, *say on. *—* You, as I said
before, being the only person that
can, according to our prediction,
destroy this usurer, and restore peace
among us, my master Georgiotti,
and the whole state of Normal-
bldgrisuffet, were going to send a splen-
did embassy to you; but your father
advising to repose the commissi-
ion wholly in me, they all conferred to
it, and I am come to invite you over
to Brandleguarp for that purpose.*
I know you will tell me you have
not the grandeur, and cannot get
thither: but I am assured you have
what is far better; the wisdom you
have will help you to surmount that
difficulty, which our whole mou-
cheratt cannot get over. And I am
sure did you apply half the thought
to accomplish it, you seem to do to
invent excuses against it, you would
easily overcome that. And now,
dear friend,* continues he, *refuse
me not; for as my first rite was
owing to your favour, so my down-
fall as absolutely attends your re-
fusal.*

*Dear Nafgig,* says I, *you know
I love you, and could refuse you no-
thing in my power; but for me to
be mounted in the air, I know not
how, over these rocks, and then
drowned by a fall into the sea, which
is a necessary consequence of such a
mad attempt; and all this in profe-
cution of a project founded upon an
old wife's tale, is such a chimera as
all men of sense would laugh at; as
if there was no way of destroying me,
but with a guard of an hundred men,
to foule me into the wide ocean. A
very pretty conqueror of rebels I
should prove, truly, kicking for life,
till the next wave sent me to the
bottom.*

Nafgig looked then to grave, I al-
most thought I should have heard no
more of it; but, after a short pause,
Peter,* says he, *I am sorry you
make so light of sacred things; a
thing foretold to long ago by a holy
ragan, kept up by undoubted tra-
dition ever since, in the manner I have
told you, in part performed, and now
waiting your concurrence for it's ac-
complishment: but if I cannot pre-
vail with you, though I perish at my
return, I dread to think you may be
forced without thanks to perform
what generously to undertake will be
your greatest glory.*

*Pray,* says I, *Nafgig, (for now
I perceive you are in earnest) what
may this famous prediction be?*

*Ah, Peter!* says Nafgig, *to what
purpose should I relate so sacred a
prediction to one who, though the
most concerned in it, makes such a jest of it?"

His mentioning me as concerned in it, raised my curiosity once more to desire a relation of it. 'Why should I relate it,' says he, 'if you are resolved not to fulfil it?' I told him I had no resolution against any thing that related to my own good, or that of my friends; 'But the greatest question with me,' says I, 'is, whether I am at all concerned in it.'—O clearly, clearly!' says he, 'there is no doubt of it; it must mean you or nobody.' I told him I must judge by the words of it, that I was the person intended by it; and till that was apparent to my reason, it would be difficult to procure my consent to so perilous an undertaking. 'And,' says he, 'will you upon hearing it, judge impartially, and go with me if you can take the application to yourself?'—'I cannot go quite so far as that,' says I; 'but this I'll promise you, I'll judge impartially, and if I can so apply it to myself, that it must necessarily mean me, and no other, and if you convince me I may go safely, I will go.'

Nafigg was so rejoiced at this, he was at a loss how to express himself. 'My dear Peter,' says he, 'you have given me new life! our state is free! our persons free! we are free! we are free! And, Peter,' says he, 'now I have given vent to my joy, you shall hear the predilection. You must know, this holy ragan lived four ages ago; and from certain dreams and revelations he had had, set himself to overturn our country-worship of the Great Image; and by his facility of life, and sound reasonings, had almost effected it under the assistance of Begfurbeck, then our king, who had fully embraced his tenets; but the rest of the ragns opposing him, and finding he could not advance his scheme, he withdrew from the ragns to a close retirement for several years; and just before his death, fending for the king and all the ragns, he told them he should certainly die that day; and that he could not die at peace till he had informed them what had been revealed to him; desiring them to take notice of it, not as a conjecture of his own, but a certain verity which should hereafter come to pass. Says he, 'You know you have rejected the alteration in your religion I proposed to you; and which Begfurbeck, here present, would have advanced; and now I must tell you what you have brought upon yourselves. As, for Begfurbeck, he shall reign the longest and most prof- perously of all your former and future kings; but in twice his time out-run, the west shall be divided from the east, and bring sorrow, confusion, and slaughter, till the waters of the earth shall produce a glumm, with hair round his head, swimming and flying without the grandee; who, with unknown fire and smock shall destroy the traitor of the west, settle the ancient limits of the monarchy, by common consent establish what I would have taught you, change the name of this country, introduce new laws and arts, add kingdoms to this state, and force tributes from the bowels of the earth, of such things as this kingdom shall not know till then, and shall never afterwards want; and then shall return to the waters again. Take care,' says he, 'you miss not the opportunity when it may be had; for once lost, it shall never, never more return; and then, woe, woe, woe, to my poor country!' The ragan having said this, expired.

This prediction made so great an impression on Begfurbeck, that he ordered all the ragns singly before him, and heard them repeat it; which having done, and made himself perfect in it, he ordered it to be pronounced twelve times in the year on particular days, in the moucherat, that the people might learn it by heart; that they and their children being perfect in it, might not fail of applying it, when the man from the waters should appear with proper description. Thus, Peter,' says he, 'has this prediction been kept up in our memories as perfectly as if it had but just been pronounced to us.'

'Tis very true,' says I, 'here may have been a prediction, and it may have been, as you say, handed down very exactly from Begfurbeck's days till now; but how does that affect me? how am I concerned in it? Surely, if any marks would have de-
noted me to be the man, some of the colombs who have lately left me, and were so long with me, would have found them out in my person, or among the several actions of my life I recounted to them.

Upon the return of the colombs from you," says Nafig, "they told his majesty what they had heard and seen at Graundevole, and the story was conveyed through the whole realm; but every man has not the faculty of distinction. Now, one of the ragans, when he had heard of you, applying you to the prediction, and that to you, soon found our deliverer in you; and at a publick moucheratt, after first pronouncing the prediction, declared himself thereon to the following effect—

"May it please your majesty—and you the honourable colombs—the reverend ragans—and people of this state," says he,—"you all know that our famous King Begscurbeek, who reigned at the time of this prediction, did live sixty years after it in the greatest splendor, and died at the age of one hundred and twenty years, having reigned full ninety of them; and herein you will all agree with me, no king before or since has done the like. You all likewise know, that within two hundred years after Begscurbeek's death, that is, about twice his reign of ninety years out-run, the rebellion in the west began, which has been carried on ever since; and our strength diminishing as theirs increases, we are now no fair match for them, but are fearful of being undone. So far you will agree matters have tallied with the prediction; and now, to look forward to the time to come, it becomes us to lay hold of the present opportunity for our relief; for that, once slipped, will never return; and, if I have any skill in interpretations, now is the time of our deliverance.

"Our prediction foretells the past evils, their increase and continuance, till the waters of the earth shall produce a glumm. Here I must appeal to the honourable colombs present, if the waters have not done so in the person of glumm Peter of Graundevole, as they have received it from his own report,"

"All the colombs then rising, and making reverence to the king, declared it was most true.

"The next part," says the ragan, "is, he is to be hairy round his head; and how his person in this respect agrees with the prediction, I beg leave to be informed by the colombs."

"The colombs then rising, declared, that having seen and conversed with him, they could not observe any hair on the for-part of his head; but I answered, that when I left you, I well remembered your having short stubbs of hair upon your cheeks and chin; which I had no sooner mentioned, than your father arose, and told the assembly, that though he did not mind it whilst he was with you, yet he remembered that his daughter, a year before, had told him that you had hair on your face before as long as that behind.

"This again putting new life into the ragan, he proceeded—Then let this," says he, "be put to the trial by an embassy to glumm Peter; and if it answers, there will be no room to doubt the rest. Then," says the ragan, "it is plain by the report of the colombs, that glumm Peter has not the graundee.

"As to the next point, he is to swim and fly. Now I am informed he swims daily in a thing he calls a boat."—To which the colombs all agreed. "And now," says he, "that he flies too, that must be fulfilled; for every word must have a meaning, and that indeed he must do if ever he comes hither. I therefore advise, that a contrivance be somehow found out for conveying glumm Peter through the air to us, and then we shall answer that part of the prediction; and I think, and do not doubt, but that may be done.

"Now," says he, "let us see the benefit predicted to us upon the arrival of glumm Peter. Our words are—Who, with unknown fire and smook, shall destroy the traitor of the west."—What can be plainer than this? For I again appeal to the colombs for his making unknown fire and smook.

"Thus far," says the ragan, "we have succeeded happily towards a discovery
discovery of the person; but it ends
not here with the death of the traitor;
but such other benefits are to
accrue as are mentioned in the fol-
lowing part of the prediction: they
are blessings yet to come; and who
knows the end of them?
"I hope," says the ragan, "I have
given satisfaction in what I have
said, and shall now leave it to the
care of those whose business it is to
provide, that none of those woes pro-
nounced against us may happen, by
missing the time which, when gone,
will never return."
"The assembly were coming to a re-
solution of sending you a pompous
embassy, but your father prevailed
for sending me only; "For," says he,
"my son thinks better of him
than of the rest of our whole race." So
this important affair was committed to
me, with orders to prepare a convey-
ance for you, which I cannot at-
tempt to do; but shall refer myself
to your more solid judgment in the
contrivance of it."
I had sat very attentive to Nafgig,
and from what he had declared, could
not stay but there was a very great re-
semblance between myself and the per-
son predicted of; "But, then," says I,
they are idolaters; Providence would
not interpose in this affair, when all
the glory of it's success must redound
to an idol. But," says I, "has not
the same thing often happened from
oracular prefaces, where the glory
must redound to the false deity? But
what if, as is predicted, their reli-
gion is to be changed to the old ra-
gan's plan, and that will be to the
abolition of idolatry? I know not
what to say; but if I thought my
going would gain a single soul to the
eternal Truth, I would not scruple to
hazard my life in the attempt."
I then called in Youwarkee, told
her the whole affair of the prediction,
which she had often heard, I found,
and could have repeated. I told her that
the king and states had pitched on me
as the person intended by their pre-
diction, and that Nafgig was sent to
fetch me over: 'And, indeed," says I,
Youwee, if this be a true predic-
tion, it seems very applicable to me as
far as I can see." 'Yes, truly,'
says she, 'so it does, now I consider it
in the light you lay the ragan puts
it."' Why," says I, "prophecies
and predictions are never so plain as
to mention names; but yet, upon
the solution, they become as intelli-
gible as if they did, the circumstances
tallying so exactly. But what would
you have me do? Shall I, or shall I
not, go?" 'Go!' says she, 'how
can you go?" 'O," says I, 'never
fear that. If this is from above,
means will soon be found; Provii-
dence never directs effects without
means.'
Youwarkee, whole head ran only on
the dangers of the undertaking, had a
violent conflict with herself; the love
of me, of her children, and of her
country, divided her so, she was not
capable of advising. I pressed her
opinion again, when she told me to
follow the dictates of my own reason;
'And, but for the dread of losing
you, and for my children's sakes,'
says she, 'I should have no choice to
make when my country is at stake:
but you know best.'
I told Youwarkee that I really
found the prediction the plainer the
more I thought of it; and that, above
all, the change of religion was the
uppermost; 'For if I can reduce a
state from the misery and bondage of
idolatry, to a true sense of the Su-
preme Being, and seemingly by his
own direction, shall I fear to rife up
own life for it; or, will he suffer me
to perish till somewhat at least is
done towards it? And how do I know
but the whole tendency of my life
has been by impulse hither for this
very purpose? My dear Youwee,"
says I, 'fear nothing, I will go.'
I called Nafgig, and told him my
resolution, and that he had nothing
now to do but prepare a means of con-
voying me. He said, he begged to re-
fer that to me, for my own thoughts
would suggest to me both the safest
and easiest means.
I wanted to venture on the back of
some strong glum; when Nafgig told
me, no one could endure my weight so
long a flight. But what charmed me
most was, the lovely Youwarkee offered
to carry me herself if she could;
'And if I can't hold out,' says she,
'my dear, we can but at last drop
both together.' I kissed the charm-
ing creature with tears in my eyes, but
declined the experiment.
I told Nafig I wanted to divide my weight between two or four glumms, which I believed I could easily do; and asked if each could hold out with a fourth part of my weight. He told me there was no doubt of that; but he was afraid I should drop between their grandees, he imagining I intended to lie along on their backs, part of me on each of them, or should bear so much on them as to prevent their flight. I told him I did not purpose to dispoze of myself in the manner he presumed, but if two or four could undoubtedly bear my weight so long a flight, I would order myself without any other inconvenience to my bearers than their burden. He made light of my weight between four, as a trifle, and said, he would be one with all his heart. 'Nay,' says I, 'if four cannot hold out, can eight?' He plainly told me, as he knew not what I meant, he could say nothing to it, nor could imagine how I could divide so small a body as mine into eight different weights; for it seemed impossible, he said, to him; but if I would shew him my method, he would then give me his opinion.

I then, leaving him, took out my tools: I pitched upon a strong broad board my wife had sent me from the ship, about twelve feet long, and a foot and half broad; upon the middle of which I nailed down one of my chairs; then I took one cord of about thirty-four feet long, making hand-loops at each end, and nailed it down in the middle to the under side of my board, as near as I could to the fore-end of it; and I took another cord of the same length and make, and this I nailed within three feet of the farther end of my board. I then took a cord of about twenty feet long, and nailed about three feet before the foremost, and a fourth of the same length, at the farther end of my board; by which means, the first and third ropes being the longest, and at such a distance from the short ropes, the glumms who held them, would fly so much higher and forwarder than the short rope ones, that they and their ropes would be quite out of the others way, which would not have happened if either the ropes had been all of one length, or nearer to or farther from one another; and then considering that if I should receive a sudden jerk or twitch, I might possibly be shook off my chair, I took a smaller rope to tie myself with fast to the chair, and then I was sure, if I fell into the sea, I should at least have the board and chair with me, which might possibly buoy me up till the glumms could descend to my assistance.

Having carried the machine down to the level with the help of two of Nafig's men, he being out on a walk, and having never seen it, I ordered one of the men to sit upon the chair, and eight more to hold by the loops, and ride with him; but, as I found it difficult at their first rising, not being able to mount all equally, to carry the board up even, and the back part rising first, the front pitched against the ground, and threw the fellow out of the chair; I therefore bade them stop, and ordering eight others to me, said I, 'Hold each of you one of these ropes as high as you can over your heads; then,' says I, to the eight bearers, 'mount on your grandees, and come round behind him in the chair gently, two and two, and take each of you a loop, and hover with it till you are all ready, and then ride together, keeping your eye on the board that it rises neither higher at one end or one side than the other; and see you all feel your weight alike; then fly cross the lake and back again.' They did so, and with as much ease, they told me, as if they had nothing in their hands; and the man rode with so much state and composure, he said, that I longed to try it myself; so, shifting places with the glumm, I mounted the chair, and tying myself round, I asked if any one knew which way Nafig walked: one of them pointing to where he saw him just before in the wood, I ordered them to take me up as before, and go that way.

Upon coming to the place where I expected Nafig was, I hallooed and called him; who, knowing my voice, ran to the skirt of the wood; and seeing me mounted in my flying chair, jokingly told him I was going, if he had any commands; but he mounting immediately came up to me, and viewing me round, and seeing the pleasure the men seemed to carry me with, says he, 'Are you all sure you can carry him?
him safe to Battringdrigg?" They all replied, 'Yes, with care.'—' This, then,' says he, 'is your doom; if you perform it not, every one shall be flit, but if you carry the deliverer safe, you are flags every man of you!' he verily thinking I was then going off; but I undeceived him, by ordering them to turn about and set me down where I was taken up.

Nafigig alighting, and viewing my contrivance, 'This, Peter,' says he, 'is but a very plain thing.'—' It is so,' says I, 'but it is as far as my ingenuity could reach.'—' Ah, Peter!' says he, 'say not so, for if the greatest difficulties, as I and all my nation thought it would be to convey you to them, are so plain and easy to you, what must lesser things be? No, Peter, I did not call it plain because it might be easily done when it was seen, but in respect to the head that formed it; for the nearest way to attain one's end is always the best, and attended for the most part with fewest inconveniences; and I verily think, Peter, though we believe the rise or fall of our state wholly depends on you, you must have stayed at Glundevelot but for your own ingenuity. Well, and when shall we set out?' says he. I told him it would take up some time to settle the affairs of my family, and to consider what I had best take with me; and required at least three days, being as little as I could have told him for that purpose.

Nafigig, who as he was an honest man, and for making the best for his patrons, was sorry it was so long, though he imagining at the same time it was short enough for one who was to go on such an enterprise, was glad it was no longer; and immediately dispatched a trumpet express with notice, that on the fourth day he should beat the height of Battringdrigg, and that having myself formed a machine for that purpose, I would accompany him.

I began next to consider what part I had to act at Doortp Swangamto (for I neither could nor would call it by any other name when I came thither) and what it was they expected from me. 'I am,' says I, 'to kill a traitor; good, that may be, but then I must take a gun and ammunition; and why not some pistols and cutlaffes? If I cannot use them all, I can teach others who may: I will take several of them, and all my guns but two, and I will leave a pair of pistols; I may return and want them. I will take my two best suits of cloaths, and other things suitable; for, if I am to perform things according to this prediction, it may be a long time before I get back again.' Thinks I, 'Youwark will stay here with the children, and if I like my settlement I can send for her at any time.'

I then began to see the necessity of making at least one more machine to carry my goods on: 'And,' says I, 'as they will be very weighty, I must have more laks to shift in carrying them, for I will retain sixteen for my own body-machine, in order to retrieve each other; and as the distance is so great, I will not be stinted for want of fresh hands.'

Being come to this resolution, I called Nafigig, and ordered eight-fresh laks to attend my baggage; these he soon sallout: fo, having settled all matters with my wife, and taken leave of her and the children, I charged them not to stir out of the grotto till I was gone; and leaving them all in tears, I set out with a heavy heart for the level, where the whole convoy and my two machines waited for me.

CHAP. IX.

PETER'S SPEECH TO THE SOLDIERY—OFFERS THEM FREEDOM—HIS JOURNEY IS MET BY THE KING—THE KING SENT BACK, AND WHY—PETER A LIGHTS IN THE KING'S GARDEN—HIS AUDIENCE—DESCRIPTION OF HIS SUPPER AND BED.

When we came to the level, I desired Nafigig to draw all his men into a circle as near as they could stand; I then asked them who would undertake to carry me; when not a man but proffered his service, and desired to have the post of honour, as they called it. I told them my question was only in case of necessity, to know whom I might depend upon, for my bearers were already provided, saving accidents. 'But, my friends,' says I,
as you are equally deserving for the
offered service, as if you were ac-
cepted, are any of you desirous of
being falgays? They all anfwering
together, 'I, I, I!"—Nafigg, says
I, 'you and I must come to a capitu-
lation before I go; and your honour
must be pledged for performance of
articles.'

I began with telling them what an
enemy I was to flavery; 'And,' says I,
to Nafigg, 'as I am about to undertake
what no man upon earth ever did be-
fore; to quit my country, my fami-
ly, my every other convenience of
life, for I know not what, I know
not where, and from whence I shall
never return; I must be indulged,
if I am ever so fortunate as to arrive
safe in your country, in the fatis-
faction of seeing all these my fellow-
travellers as happy as myself; for
which reafon I muft infift upon every
man prefent alighting with me in
fafety, being made free the moment
we touch the ground: and unless
you will engage your honour for
this, I will not flir a step farther.'
Nafigg paffed for an anfwer; for
though my bearers were his own larks,
and he could difpofe of them at plea-
sure, yet; as the reft were the kings,
he knew not how far he might venture
to promife for them; but being defirous
to get me over the rock, fearing I
might ftilf retract my purpofe, he en-
gaged to procure their freedom of the
king. And this, I thought, would
make the men more zealous in my ser-
vice.

I then permitting them to take me
up, we were over the rock as quick as
tought; and when I had a little ex-
perienced the flight, I perceived I had
nothing to fear; for they were fo dex-
trous on the granade, that I received
not the leaft shock all the way, or
fearce a wry position, though every
quarter of an inch at hand made a con-
siderable defection from the perpendi-
cular. We flifled but twice till we
came to Battringdigg; the manner
of which I directed as I fat in my
chair: for I ordered the new man to
hover over him he was to relieve, and
reaching down his hand to meet the
others which were held up with a rope;
the old beareer funk beneath the chair;
and the reliever took his course. This
we did one by one, till all were chang-
ed; but there was one, a f stout young
fellow, at the firft fhort rope on my right-
hand, who observing me to eye him
more than the reft, in a bravado would
not be relieved before we arrived at
Battringdigg arkoé; and I afterwards
took him into my family.

As it was now somewhat advanced
into the light feafon, I had hopes of a
tolerable good prospect; but had it been
quite light, I fhould have been never
the better for it. I had been upon very
high mountains in the inland parts of
Africa; but was never too high to fee
what was below me before, though
very much contracted; but here, in
the height of our flight, you could
not diftinguih the globe of the earth
but by a fort of mift, for every way
looked alike to me; then fometimes on
a cue given, from an inexprefible
height my bearers would dart as it were
floating like a fwooning-flar, for an in-
credible distance, almost to the very
surface of the sea, flill keeping me as
upright as a Spaniard on my feat. I
asked them the reafon of their fo vaft
defcent, when I perceived the labour
they had afterwards to attain the fame
height again. They told me, they not
only eafed their granadees by that de-
cent, but could fly half as far again
in a day, as by a direct (they meant
horizontal) flight; for though it feemed
laborious to mount fo exceflive high,
yet they went on at the fame time at a
great rate; but when they came to de-
cend again, there was no compaffion
in their ifpeed. And, on my con-
fcience, I believe they spoke true, for
in their defcents I think no arrow
could have reached us.

In about sixteen hours, for I took my
watch with me, we alighted on the
height of Battringdigg; when I
thought I had returned to my own ar-
koé, it was fo like it, but much larger.
Here we refted four hours; I opened
my cheef, and gave each of my bearers
a drop of brandy. Nafigg and I also
just wetted our mouths, and eat a piece
of prefferie to moisten us; the reft of the
larks fitting down, and feeding upon
what they had brought with them in
their colapers; for their method is,
when they take long flights, to carry a
number of hard round fruits, flat like
my cream-cheeffes, but much lefs, which
containing a fort of flower they eat
dry; then drinking, that swells; and
fills
fills them as much as a good meal of any thing else would. Here we met with abundance of delightful pools of water on the vast flat of the rocks. They told me, in that arkokoe the young glumms and gawrens came in vast flights separately, to divert themselves on the fine lake of waters, and from thence went sometimes as far as my arkokoe, for that purpose; but that was but seldom.

When we had sufficiently rested, they shut their colapets, which sometimes hung down from their necks, and were sometimes swung round to their backs, and crossing the arkokoe and another large sea, but nothing comparable to the first, we arrived in about six hours more to the height of the white mountains, which Nafigg told me were the confines of Georgiætti's territories; 'But,' thinks I, 'it may belong to whom it will for the value of it;' for nothing could be more barren than all the top of it was; but the inside of it made amends for that, by the prodigious tall and large trees it abounded with, full of the strangest kinds of fruits I had ever seen; and these trees most of them seemed to grow out of the very stone itself, not a peck of dirt being to be collected near them. Without the mountains, it was scarce darker than at my arkokoe; for I made all the observation my time would allow me; when spying at a vast distance several lights which were unfruitful things to me in that country, they told me, the largest was the burning mountain Alkoae: this I remembered to have heard the name of upon some former occasion, though I could not recollect what; and that the rest were of the same sort, but smaller. I asked if they were in Georgiæti's territories. They said no, they belonged to another king formerly, whose subjects were as fond of fire as Georgiæti's were of avoiding it; and that many of them worked with it always before them, and made an insufferable noise by it.

At hearing the above relation, an impression struck my fancy, that they might be a sort of smiths or workers in iron, or other metals; and I wished myself with them, for I had a mighty notion of that work, having been frequently at a neighbouring forge when a boy, and knew all their tools, and resolved to get all the information I could of that country some other time; for our company drawing to their posts, and preparing to set forward again, I could have no more talk now; and you must know, I had observed so many idle rascals before I left England, who could neither strike a stroke, nor stir a foot, whilst you talked with them, that I feared if I asked questions by the way, they should in answering me neglect their duty, and let me drop.

When we came near our journey's end, Nafigg asked me where I would please to alight. I told him I thought at my father's; for though I came on a visit to the king, it would not shew respect to go before him just off a journey. But I might have spared me the trouble of settling that point; for we were not gone far from the Black Mountain, it going by that name within five miles, though it is called the White without, before we heard the gripfacks, and a sort of squeaking or screaming mufick, very loud. Nafigg told me the king was in flight. I asked him, how he knew that, for I could see nobody. He knew it, he said, by the gripfack, and the other mufick, which never played but on that occasion; and, presently after, I thought the whole kingdom were on the ground, and was going to order my bearers back to the mountain, for fear of the concours. I think I, 'They will jostle me down out of civility, and I shall break my neck to gratify their curiosity.' So I told Nafigg, if he did not somehow stop the multitude, I would turn back for the mountain, for I would never venture into that crowd of people.

Nafigg prung away to the king, and informed him; but the king fearing the people should be disquieted at his sending them back, gave orders for the whole body to file off to the right and left, and taking a vast sweep each way, to fall in behind me; but upon no account to come near me for fear of mischief. This was no sooner said than done, and all spreading into two vast semicircles, met in a train just behind my chair.

Nafigg had also persuaded the king to retreat back to the palace, telling him it was not with me as with them, who could help themselves in case of accident; but as I was under the guidance
guidance of others, and on a foundation he should scarce, in my condition, have ventured upon, he was sure I should be better satisfied with his intended respect only, than to receive it there: "But," says he, "that your majesty may see his contrivance, I will cause him to alight in the palace-garden, where you may have the pleasure of viewing him in his machine." The king returning, ordered all the colambs, who waited my arrival, to assemble in council again; and as I went over the city, I was surprized to see all the rock of which it consisted quite covered with people, besides prodigious numbers in the air, all shouting out peals of welcome to me; and as we were then but little above their heads, every one had something to say of me; one wondering what I had got on, another swearing he saw hair on my face as long as his arm; and in general, every one calling on the Image for my safety.

The king was present when I alighted in the garden; and himself taking me from my chair, I bent on one knee to kiss his hand: but he took me in his arms, called me his father, and told me, he hoped I would make his days equal in glory to his great ancestor Befurbeck. We complimented some time, before he took me into a small refectory in the garden, and gave me some of his sort of wine; which I found was loaded with rams-horn, and some dried and moist sweetmeats. He then told me, I had a piece of ceremony to go through, after which he hoped to have me to himself. I told him, whatever forms of state were customary, they become necessary, and I should obey him.

His majesty then called one of the persons in waiting, and telling him he was going to the room of audience, ordered him to conducts me thither forthwith.

Following my guide, after a long walk through a fort of piazza, we entered under a flately arch, curiously carved, into a very spacious room, lighted with infinite numbers of globelamps; where he desired me to sit down on a round stone pedestal covered with leaves, and all round the sides of it were running foliages exquisitely wrought; on the walls were carved figures of glumms in several actions, but chiefly in battle, or other warlike exercises, in alto-relievo, very bold; with other devices interpersed. I sat down, having first paid my submission to the throne, and to the several colambs who sat on the king's right and left, down the sides of the room.

The person then who introduced me, going into the middle of the room, spoke to this effect—"Mighty king—" and you honourable lords" his colambs—here is present the glumm Peter of Graunveolot; I wait your commands where to dispose him." Then the king and all the colambs arising, another person stepped forth, and looking at me, for I was standing, "Glumm Peter of Graunveolot," says he, "I am to signify to you that the mighty King Georgetti, and all his honourable colambs, congratulate your arrival in Normbdfgriltt, and have commanded me to give you rank according to your merit." Then the king and colambs sat down, and I was led to the king's right-hand, and placed on the same stone with, but at some small distance from, his majesty.

The king then told me the great pleasure I had done him and the colambs, in my so speedy arrival upon their massage; but said, he would give me no farther trouble now, than to know how I chose to be served; and desired me to give orders to a bath he would send to me, for whatever I wanted; and then giving orders to a bath to shew me my lodgings, I was permitted to retire to refresh myself.

I was then conducted to my apartment, up a sloping flight of stone, very long, with a vast arch over my head; I believe it might be fifty paces long at least, but being a very broad easy ascent, and smooth, it was not in the least fatiguing. All the way I went, were the same sorts of globelights as in the audience-room. The stair-cafe, if I may call it so, it answering the same purpose, was most beautifully carved, both sides and top; at length I came into a very large gallery, at least fourscore paces long, and about twenty broad; on each side of which hung the same globes. At the farther end of this gallery I entered by an arch, very narrow, but most neatly wrought into an oval room; in the middle of this room, on the right-hand, was another small neat arch—way.
way; entering through which about ten paces, there were two smaller arches to the right and left, and within them, with an easy ascent of about three paces, you came to a flat trough of stone, six or seven feet long, and about the same width; the, I understood by my bath, were the beds to lie on. I asked him, if they were used to lie on the bare stone. He told me some did; but he had orders to lay me on a slide; and presently up came four fellows with great mats; as I took them for by my globe-light, full of something, which by their so easily carrying so great bulk, I perceived was very light. They pitched it down upon my stone bedstead, and first with great sticks, and then with small switches having beat it soundly, retired.

While I was looking at the oddity of the place, I found my bath was gone too. So, says I, 'all gone! I suppose they intend I shall now go to bed.' I then went into my bed-chamber, for there were globe-lights there too, and observing my bed lay full four feet above the stone, and sloping higher to the sides and head, I went to feel what it was; but at laying my hand upon it, it was so soft I could feel no repletion till I had pressed it some way; and it lay so light, that a fly must have funk upon it.——Well,' thinks I, 'what if I never lay thus before, I believe I have lain as bad.' I then took a turn into my oval room again, and observed the floor, sides, and all was stone, as smooth as possible, but not polished; and the walls and ceiling, and in short every place, where they could be ornamental, were well adorned with carvings as can be conceived.

Though nobody came near me yet, I did not care to be too inquisitive all at once, but I longed to know what they burnt in the globes, which gave so steady a light, and yet seemed to be enclosed quite round, top and sides, without any vent-hole for the smoke to evaporate. 'Surely,' thinks I, 'they are a dullish glass,' for they hung almost above my touch, and must be exceeding hot with the fire so inclined, and have some small vent-hole, thought I can't feel it. Then standing on tip-toe to feel, it struck quite cold to my finger; but I could only reach to touch that, or any of the rest, being all of one height.

Whilst I was musing thus, I heard the sound of voices coming along the gallery; and presently came a train of servants, with as much viands as a hundred men could eat, and wines proportionable; they set it down at the upper end of the oval room, on a flat of stone, which on making the room had been left in the upper bend of the oval quite clean it, about table high, for that purpose. These viables, such as were liquid, or had sauces to them, were served up in a sort of the stone-bowls; but the dry were brought in neat wooden baskets of twig-work.

The servants all retiring into the gallery, except my bath, I asked him, if any body was to eat with me: he told me, 'No.'——'I wonder,' says I, 'they should send me so much,' then. He replied, it was the allowance of my apartment by his majesty's orders; which silenced me.

I believe there were twenty different things on the table, insomuch that I did not know where to begin, and heartily wished for an excuse to get rid of my bath, who stood close at my elbow, that I might have smelt, and tasted, before I helped myself to any thing; for I knew not what any one thing was.

In this perplexity, I asked my bath, what poet he was in under his majesty. He said, one of the fifty bashes appointed to be near the king's favourites when at court. 'And pray,' said I, 'are you the person to attend me?' He was, he said; the principal to wait on my person; but there were at least sixty others, who had different offices in this apartment. 'I would be glad,' said I, 'to know your name, that I may the more readily speak to you.' He told me his name was Quilly.

Then, pray, Quilly,' says I, 'do you know what is become of my baggage, and my chair?' I found, though he gazed at my baggage, he was puzzled at the name of chair; 'My feat,' says I. 'Oh, I understand you,' says he. 'Then, pray, will you go bring me word of them, and see them brought safe up into the gallery.' He tripped away on my errand. —So, thinks I, 'now I am fairly rid of you!' but I had scarce turned any of my viands over, before I found he had but stepped into the gallery, to send some of the idle fellows in waiting there; and this putting
Quilly began with this, and ran on to that, which was a fine dish; and the other few but the king have at their tables: And here, says he, is a dish of paedi; and there—Hold, hold, says I, Quilly! let’s try these first, before you proceed; for I remembered, at my grotto, they all eat my fish for paedi, and I cut a slice of it, (for I always carried my clasp-knife in my pocket, and they had no such thing there) and laying it on a round cake I took for my trencher, I tasted it, and found it so to my apprehension, in the palate; but it did not look or taste like fish, as I observed by the slices they had cut it into; for all the viands were in long slices ready to bite at. I asked him if these things were not all cut, and with what; (for I understood they had no knives, shewing him mine;) he said the cook cut it with a sharp stone. I then asked him the names of several other things, and at last he came to crullmotts; which having heard of before, I now tasted, and could have sworn it had been a hashed fowl. I asked him if crullmotts were very common; he told me ‘Yes,’ towards the bottoms of the mountains there were abundance of crullmott-trees. ‘No, no,’ says I, ‘not trees; I mean fowls, birds.’ ‘I don’t know what they are,’ said he; ‘but these crullmott grow on very large trees.’ Indeed, I did not know yet what I was at; ‘But,’ says I, ‘if your fowls do, sure your fih don’t grow on trees too!’ ‘We have none of them,’ says he, ‘in this country.’ ‘Why,’ says I, ‘it is but this moment I tasted one.’ ‘I don’t know,’ then, said he, ‘where the cook got it.’ ‘Why, here,’ says I, ‘what you call paedi I call fish.’ ‘Aye, paedi,’ says he, ‘grows upon a bush in the same woods.’ ‘Well done,’ says I, ‘this is the first country I was ever in where the fish and fowls grew on trees: it is ten to one but I meet with an ox growing on some tree by the tail before I leave you.’

I had by this time, out of these two and some other pickings, made up a very good meal; and putting my knife into my pocket, desired something to drink. My bath asked me what I pleased to have; I told him, any thing to take a good draught of. Then he filled me a bottle of wine, very well taffed, though too sweet for meals; but putting some water to it, it did very well.

My messengers being returned, and having set all my things in the gallery, I desired Quilly to let the viands be taken away; upon which there came more servants than dishes, who took all at once, but some wine and water I desired might remain.

I told Quilly I saw there were two beds—‘Who are they for?’ says I. ‘One for you, and one for me,’ says he; ‘for we baths never leave the king’s favourites.’—Pray, Quilly,’ says I, ‘what is the meaning that to the several rooms I have been in, there is never a door?’—‘Door!’ says he, ‘I don’t know that.’—‘What!’ says I, ‘don’t you shut your rooms at night?’—‘No, no! shut at night!’—‘I never heard of that!’—‘I believe,’ says I, ‘Quilly, it is almost bed-time, is it not?’—‘No, no!’ says Quilly, ‘the gipplack has not founded.’—How do you know,’ says I, ‘in this country, when you shall lie down, and when arise? for my wife has told me you have no clocks.’—‘No! no clocks!’ says he. ‘Then,’ says I, ‘does every one rise and lie down, when they please; or do you all lie down and all rise together about the same time?’—‘O,’ says Quilly, ‘you will hear the gipplack presently; there are several gipplums who take it by turns to find it for rest, and then we know it is time to lie down; and when they found it again, we know it is time to rise.’ And afterwards I found these people guessed the time (being twelve hours between found and found) so well, that there were but few minutes variation at any time between them and my watch; and I set my watch to go from their foundings at six o’clock.

I found myself pretty much fatigue after my journey; for though I had only to fit sill, yet the excessive velo-
city of such an unusual motion strained every muscle as much as the hardest labour: for, you may imagine, I could not at first be without my fears upon ever so small a variation of my chair; which, though I could not possibly by my own inclination one way or other rectify, yet a natural propensity to a perpendicular station involuntarily bi-}

fused one to incline this or that way in order to preserve it: and then, at first, my breath being ready to fail me in proportion to the celerity of the flight, and to my own apprehensions, and being upon that exercise near thirty hours, and without sleep for almost forty, you may judge I wanted rest: so I told Quilly I would lie down, and ordered him not to disturb me till I woke up myself.

I could not prevent the officiousness of my valet to put me to-bed, and cover me with the down, or whatever it was; for having no sheets, I pulled off nothing but my coat, wig, and shoes; and putting on my flannel night-cap, I laid me down.

CHAP. X.

THE KING’S APARTMENTS DESCRIBED—IS INTRODUCED TO THE KING—A MOUCHERATT CALLED—HIS DISCOURSE WITH THE KING ABOUT RELIGION.

I have known some travellers so peculiar in their taste as not to be able to sleep in a strange lodging; but, thanks to my kind stars, that did not prove my case; for having looked on my watch when I went to-bed, as I call it, and finding it was down, I wound it up, and observed it began to go at about three o’clock, whether day or night, matters not; and when I waked it was past nine, so that I know I had slept eighteen hours; and finding that a very reasonable refreshment, and myself very hungry, I called Quilly to get me my breakfast.

Quilly told me his majesty had been to visit me, but would not have me disturbed. I begged him to dispatch my breakfast as soon as possible, and let him have some water for my hands, he ordered the gallery-waiters, and every thing came immediately.

My breakfast was a brown liquid, with a sort of seeds or grain in it, very sweet and good; but the fear of the king’s return before I was ready for him, prevented my enquiring into what it was: so having finished it, and washed my hands, Quilly presented me a towel, which looked like an unbleached coarse linen, but was very soft and spongy; and I found afterwards was made of threads of bark stripped from some tree. I put on my brown suit, sword, and long wig, and sent Quilly to know when it was his majesty’s pleasure I should wait upon him.

I had been so much used to lamp-light in my grotto, that the lights of this gloomy mansion did not seem so unusual a thing to me as they would have done to a stranger. The king sent me word he would admit me immediately, and Quilly was my conductor to his majesty’s apartment.

We passed through the gallery, at the farther end of which was a very beautiful arch even with the Stair-case, through which Quilly led me into a large guard-room, wherein were above an hundred glumins posted in ranks, with their pikes in hand, some headed with flarip-pointed stone, others with multangular stone, and others with stone globes. Passing through these, we entered another gallery as long as that to my apartment; then under another arch we came into a small square room, carved exceeding fine; on the right and left of which were two other arch-ways leading into most noble rooms; but we only saw them, passing quite close the little room, through an arch that fronted us into a small gallery of prodigious height; at the farther end of which Quilly turning aside a mat, introduced and left me in the most beautiful place in the universe; where, neither seeing nor hearing any body for it, I employed myself in examining the magnificence of the place, and could, as I then thought, have feasted my eye with variety for a twelvemonth. I paced it over one hundred and thirty of mypaces long, and ninety-six broad; there were arches in the middle of each side, and in the middle of each end; the arch-ceiling could not be less than the breadth of the room, and covered with the most delightful carvings, from whence hung globe-lights innumera-
I had never seen anything like it for grandeur and magnificence before; but the beauty of the sculpture, and disposition of the lights, were most exquisite.

All this while I felt the other glumm handling my long wig, and feeling whether it grew to my head, or what it was; for he had by this time got his finger under the caul, and was pulling my hair down: when I turning about my head, 'Glumm Peter,' says the king, 'don't be uneasy, the ragan will do you no hurt, it is only to satisfy his curiosity; and I chose to have the ragan here, that we may more leisurely advise with you what course to take in the present exigences of my state. I have fully heard the story of your travels from my columbs, and we have returned thanks to the Great Image for bringing you, after so many hazards and deliverances, safe to my dominions for our defence.'

The ragan desired to know whether all that hair (meaning my wig) grew upon my head or not. I told him no, it was a covering only, to put on occasionally; but that hair did grow on my head, and pulling off my wig I showed them. The ragan then asked me if I had hair of my own growing under that too, (meaning my beard, which he then had in his hand, for their glumms have no beards;) but I told him that grew there of itself.

'O parly Puly!' says the ragan, rising up, and fizing his hands together, 'it is he! it is he!'

'Pray,' says I, 'ragan, who is this Puly you speak of?'—'It is the Image,' says he, 'of the great Collwar.'—'Who is that?' says I.—'Why, he that made the world,' says he. 'And pray,' says I, 'what did his Image make?'—'O,' says he, 'we made the Image.'—And, pray, says I, 'can't you break it again?'—'Yes,' says he, 'if we had a mind to be fruck dead, we might, for that would be the immediate consequence of such an attempt; nay, of but holding up a finger against it in contempt.'—'Pray,' says I, 'did ever any body die that way?'—'No,' says he, 'no one ever durst presume to do it.'—'Then, perhaps,' said I, 'upon trial, the punishment you speak of might not be the consequence of such
such an attempt. Pray," says I, "what makes Collwar have so great a
kindness for that Image?" — Be-
caufe," says he, "it is his very like-
ness, and he gives him all he asks
for us; for we only ask him. Why,"
says he, "it is the Image that has
brought you amongst us?"

I did not then think it a proper time
to advance the contrary to the perfon
I then had to do with, as I was sure it
would have done no good; for a priest
is only to be convinced by the strongest
party: so I deferred my argument on
that head to a fitter opportunity.

"Most admirable Peter," says the
king, "you, you are the glummiest
people I can depend upon to fulfil an ancient pre-
diction delivered by a venerable ra-
gan. If you will, Ragan I. O. shall
repeat it to you, and therein you will
be able to discern yourself plainly
deferred, in not only similar, but
the express words I myself, from
your story, should deferbe you in."

In good earnest, I had from divers
circumstances concluded that I might
be the perfon; and resolved, as I
thought I had the best handle in the
world for it from the prediction, to do
what I could in the affair of religion,
by fair means or stratagem, (for I was
sensible my own single force would not
do it) before I began to shew myfelf in
their caufe, or else to defeat them;
and having had a small hint from Na-
gig of what the old ragan’s design was
in part, and which I approv’d of, I
purpofted to add what else was neceffary
as part of his design, if his propofals
had been approv’d of.

I told the king I would excufe the
ragan the repetition of the prediction,
as I had partly been inform’d of it by
Naigig; and that conceiving myfelf,
as he did, to be the perfon predict’d
of by the ragan, I had the more readily
set out on this expedition, which noth-
ing but the hopes of performing so
great a good could have prevailed with
me to undertake; and I did not doubt,
with God’s bleffing, to accomplifh it.

The king grew exceeding joyous at
what I said, and told me he would call
a moucheratt, at which all his columbs
should attend to have their advice, and
then we would proceed to action; and
ordered the ragan to let it be for the fith
day, and in the mean time that he and
his brethren should, day and night,
implore the Image to guide their de-
liberations.

The ragan being gone, I told the
king I had something to impart to him,
in which it was my duty to obtain his
majesty’s sentiments before I appeared
publicly at the moucheratt. He de-
ferred me to proceed: I told him I had
been some time considering the old ra-
gan’s prediction, with the occasion of
it; "And," says I, "it is plain to me
that all these mischiefs have befallen
you for neglect of the ragan’s pro-
posal concerning religion; as I un-
derfand your great ancefior would
have come into it, and would have
had his people done so too but for
the ragan, who hindered it.

"You find," says I, "by your tra-
ditional history, that Begfurbeck liv-
ed long, and reigned gloriously; and
I would aim at making you as pro-
perous as he was, and infinitely more
happy, not only in outward splen-
dor here, but in great glory here-
after."

Perceiving that my discourse had
quickened the king’s attention, says I,
"I must let your majesty know it is the
old ragan’s plan I must proceed upon
in every branch of it." — Why," says
the king, "he would have abolifh’d
our worship of the image." — And
"so would I," says I; "nay, not only
would, but must and will, before I
engage myself in your deliverance;
and then with the only afifance of
the great Collwar, whom I adore,
and whom you must too, if you ex-
pect any fervice from me, I don’t
doubt to prevail.

"Your majesty fees," says I, "in
few words, I have been very plain
with you; and I desire you, in as
concifl and plain a manner, to an-
swer me, what are your thoughts on
this head? for I can say no more till
I hear them."

The king feeing me fo peremptory;
"Gumm Peter," says he, looking
about to fee no one was near, "I have
too much fenfe to imagine our Image
can do either good or hurt; for if it
could have done us good, why would
it not in our greatest diffrets, now
near two hundred years past? For my
own part, I put no truft in it, nor did
my famous ancefior for the great Beg-
Sfurbeck;
furbeck: but here is my difficulty, where to chuse another object of worship; for I perceive by myself, man-kind must, through natural impulse, look to somewhat still above them, as a child does to his father, from whom he hopes for and expects succour in his difficulties; and though the father be not able to affit him, still he looks to him; and therefore, I say, we must have another before we can part with this, or the people, instead of the part who have been in the defection, will all desert me; for they are easy now in hopes of help from the Image, and every little gleam of success is attributed to it; but for the disadvantages we receive, the ragans charge them on the people's not praying, and paying sufficiently; which they, poor fools, knowing in their confidences to be true enough, are willing rather, as they are bid, to take the blame upon themselves, than to suffer the least to fall on the Image.

All this, says the king, I am sensible of; but should I tell them so, my life must pay for it; for the ragans would bring some meffage from the Image against me, to desert or murder me; and then happy would be the first man who could begin the mischief, which the rest would soon follow.

This so frank and unexpected declaration, gave me great confidence in the king; and I told him, if that was his opinion, he might leave the rest to me. I would so manage it, that the thing should be brought about by my means; and I would then satisfy all his scruples, and make him a flourishing prince. But I could not help reflecting with myself, how nearly this distant prince, and his state, copied some of my neighbours in Europe.

C H A P. XI.

PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON WHAT HE WAS TO PERFORM—SETTLES THE METHOD OF IT—HIS ADVICE TO HIS SON AND DAUGHTER—GLOBE-LIGHTS LIVING CREATURES—TAKES MALECK INTO HIS SERVICE—NASGIG DISCOVERS TO PETER A PLOT AT COURT—REVOLT OF GAUN-GRUNT.

HAVING now fully entered into the spirit of the business with my own good liking, I was determined to push it vigorously, or perifh in the attempt. 'Have I,' says I, 'so large a field before me now to manifest my Maker in to a whole nation, and under his own call, and to fulfil their own prediction too; and shall I shrink at the possible danger? Or may there not rather be no probability of danger in it? The nation is in distress, the reader therefore to try any remedy for help: their Image has flood idle two hundred years; there has been an old prophecy, or at least if not true, as firmly believed to be true as if it was so; and this, in regard to the people, answers in all respects as well. But why should it not be true? It is better attested by the frequent repetition, from the original delivery to this time, than are many traditions I have heard of amongst us christians, which have come out spick and span new from the repositories of the learned, of twelve or fifteen hundred years old, little the worse for lying by; though they are not pretended to have seen light all that time, and are undoubted verities the moment they receive the grand sanction. Then if any means but fraud or force can gain so large a territory to the truth, and I am the only person can introduce it, shall not I endeavour it? Yes, surely; but I am not excluded all advantages neither, for all the works of Providence are brought to pass by appointed means: and, indeed, were it otherwise, what could we call providence? For a peremptory fiat, and it is over, may work a miracle, it is true, but will not exhibit the proceedings of Providence. Therefore let me consider, in a prudential way, how to proceed to the execution of what I am to set about—and guide me, Providence! I beseech you, to the end!

Upon the best deliberation I could take, I came to the following resolutions: first, to insist on the abolition of the Image worship, and to introduce true religion by the fittest means I could find opportunity for.
Secondly, as the rebels had been one people with those I would serve, and had this prediction amongst them too, and were interested in it, in hopes of it's distant accomplishment; so if they came properly to the knowledge, that the person predicted of had appeared, and was ready for execution of his purposes, it must stagger their fidelity to their new master; and therefore I would find means to let them know it.

Thirdly, that I would not march till I was in condition not easily to be repulsed; for that would break both the hopes and hearts of my party, and destroy my religious scheme; and therefore I would get some of my cannon.

Fourthly, that I would go to the war in my flying-chair, and train up a guard for my person with pistols and cutlasses.

These resolutions I kept to myself till the moucheratt was over, to see first how matters would turn out there.

Whilst I waited for the approaching moucheratt, my son Tommy, and daughter Hallycarnie, paid their duties to me. It is strange how soon young minds are tainted by bad company. I found them both very glad to see me, for every body, they said, told them I was to be their deliverer. They had both got the prophecy by heart, and mentioned the Image with all the affection of natural subjects. The moment Tommy spake of it to me; 'Hold,' says I, 'young man, what's become of those good principles I took so much pains to ground you in? Has all my concern for your salvation been thrown away upon you? Are you become a reprobate? What! an apostate from the faith you inherited by birth-right? Is the God I have so often declared to you a wooden one? Answer me, or never see my face more.'

The child was extremely confounded to see me look so severe, and hear me speak so harsh to him. 'Indeed, father,' says he, 'I did not willingly offend, or design to shew any particular regard to the Image; for, thanks to you, I have none; but what I said was only the common discourse in every body's mouth; I meant neither good nor harm by it.'

'Tommy,' says I, 'it is a great fault to run into an error, though in company of multitudes; and where a person's principle is found at bottom, and found upon reason, no numbers ought to shake it. You are young, therefore hearken to me—and you, Hallycarnie—whatever you shall see done by the people of this country, in the worship of this idol, don't you imitate it, don't you join in it. Keep the found lessons I have preached to you in mind; and upon every attempt of the ragans, or any other, to draw you aside to their worship, or even to speak or act the least thing in praise of this idol, think of me and my words; pay your adoration to the Supreme Father of spirits only, and to no wooden stone or earthen deity whatever.'

The children wept very heartily, and both promised me to remember and to do as I had taught them.

Being now in my oval chamber, and alone with my children, I had a mind to be informed of some things I was almost ashamed to ask Quilly. 'Tommy,' says I, 'what sort of fire do they keep in these globes? and what are they made of?'—'Daddy,' says he, 'yonder is the man shifting them, you may go and see.' Being very curious to see how he did it, I went to him; as I came near him, he seemed to have something all fire on his aim.

'What has the man got there?' says I. 'Only sweecoes,' says Tommy. By this time I came up to him; 'Friend,' says I, 'what are you about?'—'Shifting the sweecoes, Sir,' says he, to feed them.'—'What oil do you feed with,' says I? 'Oil!' says he, 'they won't eat oil; that would kill them all.'—'Why,' says I, 'my lamp is fed with oil.'

Tommy could scarce forbear laughing himself; but for fear the servant should do so too, pulled me by the sleeve, and defied me to say no more. So turning away with him; 'Daddy,' says he, 'it is not oil that gives this light, but sweecoes, a living creature; he has got his basket full, and is taking the old ones out to feed them, and putting new ones in; they shift them every half-day, and feed them.'—'What,' says I, 'are all these infinite number of globes I see living creatures!'—'No,' says he, 'the globes are only the transparent shell of a bott, like our calibashes, the light comes from the sweecoe with—

S 2 in.'
"in."—Has that man," says I, "got any of them?"—"Yes," says he, "you may see them: the king, and the colambs, and, indeed, every man of note, has a place to breed and feed them in."—"Pray, let us go see them," says I, "for that is a curiosity indeed."

Tommy desired the man to shew me the sweeneyes, so he set down his basket, which was a very beautiful resemblance of a common higler’s basket, with a handle in the middle, and a division under it, with flaps on each side to lift up and down. It was made of straw-coloured small twigs, neatly compacted, but so light as scarce to be of any weight. Opening one of the lids, I could make very little distinction of habitances, the bottom seeming all over of a quite white colour. I looking surprized at the light, the man took out one, and would have put it into my hand, but perceiving me shy of it, he assured me it was one of the most innocent things in the world; I then took it, and surveying it, it felt to my touch as smooth and cold as a piece of ice. It was about as long as a large lumbworm, but much thicker. The man seeing me admire the brightness of its colour, told me it had done its duty, and was going to be fed; but those which were going upon duty were much clearer: and then opening the other lid, those appeared far exceeding the others in brightness, and thickness too. I asked what he fed them with. He said, "Leaves and fruit;" but grapes, when he could get it, which was not often, they were very fond of.

Having diffused my children, I sent for Nafgig, to gain some intelligences I wanted to be informed of. The moment I saw him, it came into my mind to enquire after my new filgays. He said the king granted my request at the first word. I told him then he had saved his honour with me, and I was obliged to him: But," says I, "you told me your bearers should be free too."—"They are so," says he. "Then there is one thing I want," says I; "and that is, to see the second bearer on my right-hand, who came through without shifting. I have a fancy for that fellow," says I, "to be about my person: I like him; and, if you can give him a good word, I should be glad to treat with him about it."

"My friend Peter," says he, "you are a man of penetration, though it ill becomes me to say so in regard of persons; but I can say that for him, if he likes you as well as you esteem to like him, he is the truthful fellow in the world; but as he knows his own worth, he would not be so to every body, I can tell you that."—"I don’t fear his disliking me," says I, "for I make it my maxim to do as I would be done by; and if he is a man of honour, as you seem to say, he would do the same, and we shall be soon agreed."—"But," says Nafgig, "it being now the fourth day since he was freed, he may be gone home perhaps, for he is not of our country, but of Mount Alkoe. If Quilly can find him, he will come." So he ordered Quilly to send for Maleck of Mount Alkoe, with orders to come to me.

We descended from one discourse to another, and at length to King Georgetti’s affairs; when Nafgig, giving a sigh, "Ah, Peter!" says he, "we shall loiter away our time here till the enemy are upon our backs. There is venom in the grafs; I wish my good matter is not betrayed."—"By whom?" says I. "By that he little suckests," says he. "Why," says I, "they tell me you are much in his favour; if so, why do you suffer it?"—"I believe," says Nafgig, "I am in his favour, and may continue in it if I will join in measures to ruin him; but else I shall soon be out of it."—"You tell me riddles," says I. "These things," says he, "a man talks with his head in his teeth. There is danger in them, Peter; there is danger!"—"You don’t suspicion me," says I, "do you?"—"No," says he, "I know your foul too well; but there are three persons in these dominions who will never let my master rest till out of his throne, or in hoximo. I am but lately in favour, but have made as many observations, perhaps, as those who have been longer about the king."

"Nafgig," says I, "your concern proceeds from an honest heart; don’t little what you have to say; if I can counsel
counsel you with safety I’ll do it; if not, I’ll tell you so.’

‘Peter,’ says he, ‘Georigetti was the only son of a well-beloved father, and ascended his throne ten years ago on his decease; but Harlokin, the prince of the revolution, whose head is never idle, finding that whiffpers and base fomes spread about, did not hurt Georigetti, or withdraw his subje&s affections, has tried a means to make him undo himself.’—‘As how?’ says I. ‘Why,’ said he, ‘by closely playing his game he has got one of his relations into the king’s service, than whom he could never have chosen a fitter instrument. He by degrees, feeding the king’s humour, and promising mountains, has pushed into the best places in the kingdom: his name is Barbarfa, a most insolent man, who has had the assurance to corrupt the king’s ministers, and has prevailed and brought her over to his interest.’—‘O perfidy!’ says I, ‘is it possible?’—‘Yes,’ says he; ‘and more than that, has drawn in, till now, an honest man called Nicor; and it has been agreed between them to protest this war; till by their stratagems in procuring the revolt of Gauingrun, a very large and populous province, and now the barrier between us and the rebels, and two or three more places, they shall have perjured Georigetti to fly; and then Barbarfa is to be king, and Yaccambourfe his queen. A union is then to be struck between him and Harlokin, and peace made, by restoring some of the surrendered provinces: and upon the death of the first of them, or their issue, childlets, the survivor, or his issue, is to take the whole. They laugh at your uniting the dominions, and the old prediction.’

‘Thefe,’ said I, ‘Nafgig, are serious things, and, as you fay, are not lightly to be talked of; but, Nafgig, know this, he that conceals them is a traitor. Can you prove this?’—‘I have heard them fay so,’ says Nafgig. ‘How!’ says I, ‘and not discover it?’—‘I am as anxious for that as you can be,’ fays he; ‘but for me to be caflhered, flit, and sent to Crafnhoort, only for meaning well, without power to perfect my good intentions, where will be the benefit to my matter or me?’—‘When and where did you hear this?’ says I. ‘Several and several times,’ fays he, ‘in my own bed.’—‘In your own bed!’ says I. ‘I’ll tell you,’ fays he; ‘it so happens that when I reft at the palace, as I am bound to do when on duty, there is a particular bed for me: now, as the whole palace is out of one solid rock, though Yaccambourfe’s apartment at the entrance is at a prodigious distance from the entrance to mine, yet my bed, and one in an inner apartment of hers, stand close together; the partition, indeed, is stone, but either from the thiness of it, or some flaw in it I have not yet discovered, I can plainly hear every word that is spoken. And there it is, in their hours of dailiance, when they use this bed, that I hear what I have now told you.’—‘Say nothing of it,’ fays I, ‘but leave the issue to me.’

By this time the messenger returned with Maleck; and he and I soon agreeing, I took him into my service. I went to bed as usual, but could get no reft, Nafgig’s story engrossing my whole attention; I was resolved, however, to be better informed before I acquainted the king of it; but rising pretty early next moring, the king came into my chamber, leaning upon Barbarfa, to tell me he had received an express that Gauingrun had revolted.

‘Peter,’ fays he, ‘behold a difturbed monarch; nay, an undone monarch!’—‘Great Sir,’ fays Barbarfa, ‘you afflict yourself too much; here is Mr. Peter come to affift you, and he will settle all your concerns, never fear.’ I eyed the man, and (though prejudice may hang an honest perfon) found him a villain in his heart; for even while he was forcing a feeling tone of affliction, he was staring at my laced hat and feather that lay on the seat, by which I was sure nothing could be at a greater dillance than his heart and tongue. His flam concern put me within a moment of feizing him in the king’s presence; but his majesty, at that instant speaking, diverted me.

Before the king left me, I told him, having certain propagations to make to the moucheratt next day, it was possible they might require time to confer them; wherefore it would be proper, at this critical time, to let them meet every...
every other day, business or none, till this affair was over. The king ordered Barbarfa to see it was so, and then we parted.

C H A P. XII.

HOLD A MOUCHERATT—SPEECHES OF RAGANS AND COLUMBS—PETER SETTLES RELIGION—INFORMS THE KING OF A PLOT—SENGS NASGIG TO THE SHIP FOR CANNON.

ATTENDING at the moucheratt to-day, I happened to be seated within two paces of the idol. There was the most numerous assembly that had ever been seen; and when all was quiet, the king opened with signifying the revolt of Gauingrunt, the approach of the enemy, and no forces in the field to stop them. This he set forth in terms so moving, that the whole assembly were melted into sighs; till one of the columbs rising up, says he, "His majesty has set forth the state of his affairs in such a manner, and, I am satisfied, a true one, that it becomes us all to be vigilant. We all seem to have, and I believe have, great faith in the remedy this day to be proposed to us, in answer to our ancient prediction; and as I doubt not but glumm Peter is the man, so I doubt not but through his management we shall still receive help; but let us consider, if we might not have prevented these preening evils, and especially this last, by speedier preparations against them. What province, or member of a state will not revolt to a numerous host just ready to devour them, if they can receive no assistance from their head? for, to my certain knowledge, his majesty had ordered this almost a year ago, and not a man gone yet. Can we expect Peter to go singly to fight an army? Did your prediction say he should go alone? No, he shall lay; that is, he and his army; what is done by them, being always attributed to their general. Enquire therefore into your past conduct, send Peter your general, and trust to the Great Image."

His majesty then said, if there had been any remissness in executing his commands, he believed it was done with a view to his service; but a more proper opportunity might be found for an enquiry of that nature. As for the present moucheratt, it was called solely to propo to Peter the execution of the remaining part of the prediction; or at least such part of it as seems now, or never, to wait it's accomplish ment.

Here arose a ragan, and told the assembly, in the name of himself and brethren, that the prediction had never yet been applicable to any one person till glumm Peter arrived; and that his sagacity of itself was a sufficient recommendation of him to the guidance of the enterprise; and requested, that glumm Peter might forthwith be declared protector of the army, and set forward with it, that the state might receive safety, and the Great Image it's proper honour.

I could now hold out no longer; but, standing up, made my speech in the following manner, or very near it. 'Mighty king—you reverence ragans—and honourable columbs—with the good people of this august assembly— I am come hither, led by the force of your own prediction, at the request of his majesty and the states, at the peril of my life, to accomplish things said to be predicted of me glumm Peter. If then you have a prediction, if then your prediction describes me, and the circumstances of these times, it confuting of several parts, they ought seriously to be weighed, that I may know when and where I am to begin my operation, and when and where to leave off; for in predictions, the whole is to be accomplished as much as any member of it.

'It is said, I shall destroy the traitor of the west; I am ready to enter upon it, and settle the ancient limits of your monarchy. Are you willing, therefore, that should be done? yea, or nay?' Then every one answered, 'Yea!'— And by common consent establish what the old ragan would have taught you? Here the king rose up; but Barbarfa giving him a touch, (for every one waited to be guided by the voice of the ragans) he sat down again; and no one answering, 'Yea,' I again put the same question, and told them, as it was their own
own concern, I would have an answer before I proceeded. One of the ragans then rose, and said, that part of the prediction was too loose to be relied on, for it was to settle what he would have taught: 'Now who knows,' says he, 'what he would have taught.' The assembly paused a considerable time, and just as I was opening my mouth to speak, an ancient and venerable ragan rose: says he, 'I am sorry, at my years, to find that truth wants an advocate; my age and infirmities might well have excused me from speaking in this assembly, so many of my brethren being present, younger and better qualified for that purpose than myself; but, as we are upon a sacred thing, and left, as I find none of them care to declare the truth, I should also be thought to confest to it's suppression if I sit silent and suffered it to be hid under a quibble, I must beg to be heard a few words. My brother who spoke last, says, the words are too loose, which say, "And by common consent establish what I would have taught:" but I beg leave to think it far otherwise, for we all know what he would have taught, and the memory of that hath been as exactly kept as the prediction; for how could our ancestors have opposed his doctrine, but from hearing and disapproving it? And we all know, not only the prediction, but the doctrine, hath been punctually handed down to us; though, we be to us! we have not proclaimed it as we have the prediction; and let me tell you, when you, my brethren, severally come to my years, and have but a single step farther to hoximo, you will wish you had taught it, as I do, who do believe and approve it.

The poor old man, having spoke as long as his breath and spirits would permit him, fat down, and I again resumed the question, as I now thought, on a much better foundation than before, and was immediately told by another ragan, that there would be no end to the assembly, if we considered every point at once, for we might next go upon what countries we should conquer, and of whom to demand tribute; which would be debating about the fruit before the feed was sown. But his opinion was, to go on and quell the rebellion, and restore the monarchy, and then go upon the other points.

I told them, if they made so light of the prediction as not to declare publicly, since they knew it, what the ragan would have taught, it ill became me to be more zealous in their own concerns than they were themselves; and I should imagine there was very little truth in any part of it, and would never hazard my life for their fakes, who would not speak the truth to save the kingdom; and desired leave of the states for my departure; for I was not a peron, I told them, to be cajoled into any thing. I undertook it at first voluntarily; and no man could, or should compel me to it; my life they might take, but my honour they should never stain, though I was affured I could easily, with their concurrence, compleat all that related to them.

The senior colamb immediately rising, desired me to have a little patience, and not to leave the assembly (for I was going out) till I had heard him.

'Here is,' says he, 'this day a thing started, which, I think, every whit as much concerns us all, and the body, and every member of the people to know, as it does Peter; and I am surprized, unless the present ragans believe what their predecessor would have taught to be better than what they now teach, (for nothing else can make us confest to it) that they should scruple to let us know it, and keep us ignorant, who are worshippers as well as themselves, of any matter which so nearly concerns us to know. I am for obliging the ragans to declare the truth. If this be a true prediction, all the relatives to it are true, and I insist that we hear it.'

This speech emboldened several others; and all the populace siding with the colombs out of curiosity, cried out to know it.

Perceiving the ragans still hurst, I rose; and beckoning the populace to silence, 'Mighty king—you, honourable colombs—and you, good people,' says I—for it is to you I now speak, hear me with attention. You think, perhaps, that the suppression of the truth by your ragans, (charged to their teeth by the most reverend...
reverend of their whole body, whose
infirmities rendering him unable,
though his will is good, to declare
this secret to you) will prevent the
knowledge of that truth your old
ragan would have taught; but you
are mistaken; and that you may
know I don't come here at a venture
to try, if I can relieve you, but with
an assurance of doing it if you con-
tent, I must let you know, from me,
what the ragan would have taught.
The ragan would have demolished
this trumpery piece of dirt, this gri-
malkin, set out with horrid face and
colour to fright children; this, I say; he would have demolished, be-
ing allured it could neither do good
nor hurt, give joy or grief to any
man, or serve any other purpo-
se whatsoever, but to procure a main-
tenance to a set of men who know
much better than they dare to tell
you. Can any of you believe this
stupid piece of earth hears me?
Some of the ragans cried, 'Yes!'
'And that he can revenge any affront
I shall give him?' Again, 'Yes, to
be sure!' — 'Let him then, if he
dare,' says I, whipping out my cut-
lafs, and with the backside of it strik-
ing his head off. 'This,' says I, 'O
glumms,' says I, 'if you imagine I
would have all those reverend men
turned out of employment as useless.
No, I find they know too much of
what is valuable; and therefore those
who are willing to continue in the
service of the mouch, and faithfully
to teach you the old ragan's doctrine,
and such further lights of the great
Being as they shall hereafter receive,
let them continue your ragans still;
and let others be chosen, and trained
up in that doctrine.'

Here the poor old man got up again
with much difficulty. 'Mr. Peter,'
says he, 'you are the man predicted
of; you have declared the old ragan's
mind, and all my brethren know it.'

Finding I had the populace on my
side, (for I did not doubt the king
and the columbs) I put the question to the
ragans: 'Reverend,' says I, 'you
fee your prediction this day about to
be fulfilled; for if it is a true one,
no force of man can withstand it.
You see your image disgraced; you
fee, and I appeal to you all for the
truth of it, that what the ragan would
have taught, has, without your affil-
tance, been disclosed. I therefore
would have you the first to break the
bondage of idolatry, and turn to the
true Collwar, as it will be so much
glory to you. Will you, and which
of you, from henceforth serve Coll-
war, and no longer worship an idol?
Such of you as will do so, let them
continue in the mouch; if none of
you will, it shall be my business to
qualify a sufficient number of true
ragans to form a succession for that
purpose. The issue of this great
affair depends upon your answers.'
They waited some time for a spokesman
to begin; and so soon as he was able
to get up, the poor old ragan said, 'I
will continue in it, and do all the
little good I can; and blessed be the
day this prediction is fulfilled, to
succeeding generations! I have lived
long enough, to have seen this.'

Then the revolt of the ragans, one by one, followed his example. And thus,
with prodigious acclamations, both the ragans and people ended the great af-
fair of religion.

I now more and more believed the
truth of the prediction; and told them
I should have occasion for seven hun-
dred men before I set out against the
rebels; and desired that they might be commanded by Nafigg. This was readily granted. I then told them, as I purposed to act nothing without their concurrence, I desired the columns would remain in the city till I set out, that they might be readily called together.

I then desired I might be quite private from company till I departed.

I took Nafigg home with me, and, when we came there, 'My dear friend,' says he, 'what have you done to day?' 'You have crushed a power hitherto immovable; and I shall never more think anything too difficult for you to attempt.'—Nafigg, says I, 'I am glad it is over.' And now,' says I, 'you must enter on a new employ: but, first, can you provide me fifty honest, faithful glummers, for a particular expedition? they must be f��ble, close, and temporizing.' He said he would, and come to me again.

I then desired a private audience of the king, who, on seeing me, began upon my favours at the moucherrat. I told him my self, if I alone, and a stranger, could gain such influence there, I might have had much more if he had joined me, especially as he had told me he gave no credit to the Image; and that I expected he would have appeared on my side. 'Ah,' Peter! says he, 'monarchs neither see, hear, nor perceive, with their own eyes, ears, or understandings. I would willingly have done it; but Barbara prevented me, by assuring me it would be my ruin; and as he is my bosom friend, what reproaches must I have suffered if it had gone amiss! Nay, I will tell you, that he and Nicor are of opinion that your coming hither, which is looked upon by us all as such a blessing, will one day undo me. 'For,' say they, 'though he may perform what you expect from him, it is not to be supposed he should suffer it to redound to you. No,' say they, 'if he can do these great things, he can soon set you aside.' Thus, though I have no doubt of you, is my spirit wafting within me through perpetual fears and jealousies; and I cannot get these men, who, knowing all my secrets, are feared by me, into my own way of thinking.'

'Mighty Sir,' says I, 'don't think I came hither to perplex, but redress a kingdom. I lived far more to my ease in my grotto, than I can in this palace; but I now desire you, drawing my sword and putting it into his hand, to pierce this heart's blood, and make yourself easy in my death, rather than, suffering me to survive, live in diﬃculty of me. No, great king,' says I, 'it is not I that would injure you; but, though I have been so short a time in your dominions, I find there are those who would, and will too, unless you exert the monarch, and shake oﬀ those harpies, which lying always at your ear, are ever buzzing diﬃcult and misconﬁdence to you.'—Peter, says he, 'what do you mean? sure I have no more traitors in my state!'—'Your majesty has,' says I. 'How can you prove it?' says he. 'But pray inform me who they are?'—'I came not hither, great king,' says I, 'to turn informer, but reformer; and so far as that is necessary in order to this, I will give you satisfaction. I only desire you will wholly guide yourself by my direction for three days, and you shall be able to help yourself to all the information you can require, without my telling you. In the mean time, appear no more thoughtful than usual, or in any other way alter your accustomed habits.'

Nafigg having sent me the ﬁfty men, I asked them if they were to be trusted, and if they could carefully and artfully execute a commission I had to charge them with. They assuring me they would, I told them I would let them into my design, which would be the best instructions I could give them, and let the management alone to them.

My conﬁdence in them made them twice as diligent as all the particular directions in the world would have done; so I only told them I had a mind the revolted towns, and also the enemy's army, should know that the person so long ago predicted of was now at Brangleguarap, and bad, as the ﬁrst step towards reducing them, and killing the traitor Tagroon, already altered their religion to the old ragan's plan; and that they had nothing now to expect but destruction to themselves.
as soon as I appeared against them with my unknown fire and smoke, which I always had with me; and that the thing was looked upon to be as good as done already at Brandiegwarpe; and then to slip away again unperceived. They all promised me exact performance, and went off.

Nafgig then coming in, I told him he was now under my command, and must take six hundred gummis with him to Graundevolte; tell Youwarkee to shew him my ship, and then he must bring me the things I had delivered to her by the name of cannon; he must bring them by ropes, as I was brought; and bring powder, which she would direct him to, and about fifty heavy balls which lay in the room with the powder. I told him if he thought he should not have men enough, he must take more; and must be as expeditious as was consistent with safety. I desired him to tell Youwarkee I hoped in a short time to send for her, and all the family, over to me. 'And now, Nafgig,' says I, 'my orders are finished: but,' says I, 'the king! I must admonish that good man. I therefore want to know the particular times Barbarfa and Yaccombours be usually meet.'—'That,' says he, 'is every night when she is not with the king; for he is excessive fond of her, and seldom lies without her; but whenever he does, Barbarfa is admitted to her.'—'And how can I know,' says I, 'when she will or will not lie with the king?'—'When she is to lie with him,' says he, 'the king never fups without her.'—Now,' says I, 'you must shew me your lodging, that I may find it in your absence; and give orders to the guard to let me in, and whoever comes with me, enter at any time.' He then took me to his chamber; but I passed through so many rooms, galleries, and passages, that I was sure I should never find it again, so I asked him if Maleck knew the way; and he assuring me he did, I took my leave of him, and he let out for Graundevolte.

CHAP. XIII.

THE KING HEARS BARBARFA AND YACCOMBOURSE DISCOURSE ON

THE PLOT—they are impeached by Peter at a mou-cherratt—condemned and executed—nicor submits, and is released.

I had now several important iron in the fire, and all to be stuck whilst hot; there was the securing religion, fowing sedition amongst the enemy, tripping up the heels of two miniyers, and a she-favourite, and transporting artillery in the air some hundred leagues; either of which failing might have been of exceeding bad consequence: but as the affair of the miniyers now lay next at hand, I entered upon that in the following manner.

'The king coming to me the next day, as by appointment; and having assured me he had hinted nothing to any one, no, not to Barbarfa or Yaccombourse, told me that Barbarfa had given orders for flopping Nafig and his men; and had persuaded him not to be in such haste in suffering me to do as I pleased, but to shew his authority, and keep me under. Says I, 'Your majesty's safety is so near my heart, that even want of confidence in me shall not make me decline my endeavours to serve you. But have you suffered him to stop Nafig?—

'No,' says he, 'Nafig was gone some time before he sent.'—'O Sir!' says I, 'you do not half know the worth of that man! but you shall hereafter, and will reward him accordingly. But now, Sir,' says I, 'to what we meet upon; if you will, as I told you, but comply with me for three days, without asking questions, I will shew you the greatest traitors in your dominions, and put them into your power too.' He promised me again he would. Then, 'Sir,' says I, 'you must not send to Yaccombourse to fup with you to-night.'—'Nor lie with me?'—'No,' says I. 'Pray, what hurt can arise to my affairs from her?' says he. 'Sir,' says I, 'you promised me to ask no questions.'—'Agreed, agreed!' says he. 'Then,' says I, 'plea to meet me at Nafig's lodgings without being perceived, if you can; at least without notice taken.'—'Good,' says he. 'And when you are there, see or hear what you will, you must not say a word.
a word till you are retired again.' All which the king engaging to perform, we parted till evening.

I called Maleck, and asked if he knew the way to Nafigg's lodging. He told me, very well: and, the time being come, he conducted me thither; where I had not waited long before the king came, most of the court being in bed. I desired the king to stay in the outer room till I went into the bed-chamber two or three times, and I thought we must have put it off till another night: but listening once again, I found they were come; so I called the king, and led him to the place; intreating him, whatever he heard, to keep his patience, or he would ruin all. We first heard much amorous discourse between Barbarfa and Yacombourfe, and then the ensuing dialogue.

**YAC.** 'My dearest Barbarfa, what was all that uproar at the moucheratt the other day?'

**BAR.** 'Nothing, my love, but that mad fellow Peter, who sets up for a conjurer, and wants us all to dance to his pipe.'

**YAC.** 'I heard he overcame the rags at an argument about the Image.'

**BAR.** 'Why, I don't know how that was; but it was the doing old ragan did their business; and truly the king's fingers itched to be on Peter's side, but I gave him a judicious nod, and you know he durst not displease so dear a friend as I am; ha, ha, ha! Am not I a fad fellow, my love, to talk so of my king?'

**YAC.** 'He that wants but one step to a throne, is almost a king's fellow.'

**BAR.** 'And that but a short one too, my dear Yacce; but I must get rid of that Nafigg, though I think I have almost spoiled him with the king, too. I don't love your thinking rascals; that fellow thinks more than I do, Yacce.'

**YAC.** 'He'll never think so good purpose, I believe: but how goes cousin Harlokin on? I find Guin-grunt is gone over.'

**BAR.** 'And so shall Bazin, Ifell, Pezcle, and Ginkatt too, my dear; for I am at work there—And then good night, my poor King Georgietti; thou shalt be advised to fly, and I'll keep the throne warm for thee.—I don't see but King Barbarfa, and Queen Yacombourfe, found much better than Georgietti. Well, my dear, whenever we come to sovereignty, which now cannot be long, if Nicor has but played his part well, for I have not had an account of his success yet; I say, when we come into power, never let us be above minding our own affairs, or suffer ourselves to be led by the nose, as this poor insignificant king does. For, in short, he may as well be a king of matts, as a king of flesh, if he will not use his faculties, but suffer me to make a fool of him thus; and I should be a fool indeed to neglect it, when he thinks it the greatest piece of service I can do him.'

**YAC.** 'Come, come, my dear! let us enjoy ourselves like king and queen till we come to the dignity.'

Finding a pause, the king, who had admirably kept his temper, even beyond imagination, stole into the outer room. 'Peter,' says he, 'I thank you, you have flown me myself. What fools are we kings! In endeavouring to make others happy, how miserable do we make ourselves! How easily are we deceived by the designing flattery of those below us!—Ungrateful villain!—Degenerate flupert—I hate you both.—Peter,' says he, 'give me your sword; I'll destroy them both immediately.'

'Hold, Sir,' says I, 'your majesty has heard sufficient to found a true judgment upon; but kings should not be executioners, or act by passion and revenge; but as you would punish that in others, so carefully avoid it yourself. You, who are in so exalted a station, as always to have it in your power to punish a known crime in individuals, have not that necessity to prompt you to a violent act, that private persons have, to whom it may be difficult to obtain justice. Therefore, my advice is, that you summon the columbs to-morrow; when Barbarfa and Nicor cannot fail to attend; and I would also desire Yacombourfe to be there, you having great proposals to make to the states which you shall want her to hear. I will in the mean time prepare the servants under Quilly, and
and order Maleck with another pofe
to attend, as by your command, to
execute your orders given by me;
and I myself will impeach those bad
perons in publick; and Nicor; if he
will not ingenuously confess what
commission he was charged with from
Barbarfa, shall be put to the torture
I direct, till he discovers it.

The king was very well pleased with
this method; so I ordered Quilly, as
from the king, to bring all my servants
to the assembly, appointing him his
place; and Maleck to select me fifty
flout perons, and to wait to execute
my orders on a signal given. So soon
as the assembly met, I told them, since
I had concerned myself in their affairs,
I had made it my business to search
into the cause of their calamities; and
finding some of the traitors were now
approached not only near to, but even
into, the capital city, his majesty had
therefore ordered me to ask their advice,
what punishment was adequate, in their
judgments, to the crime of conspiring
against him and the state, and holding
treasonable correspondence with his
enemies, under the shew of his greatest
friends.

I stopped, and looked at Barbarfa;
he turned as pale as ashes, and was
rising to speak; when the senor colamb
declared, if any such thing could be
made appear, the common punishment
of Crußlandoort was too trivial; but
they deferred to be dropt alive either to
holimo or Mount Alkoe. The seve-
ral colams all declaring the fame to be
their judgment, and even those to be
too mild for their deports, I then
stepped up to Barbarfa, who sat at the
king's left-hand, as did Yaccombourf
at his right, and telling them and Ni-
cor they were all prisoners of state, I
delivered Barbarfa and Yaccombourf
in custody to Quilly and his men, and
Nicor to Maleck and his men; ordering
them into separate apartments, with
strict commands that neither should
speak to the other upon pain of the last
pronounced judgment.

Barbarfa would have spoke, and
called out to the king, begging him
not to defer to faithful a servant for
the insufficiency of so vile a man as
Peter; but the king only told him the
evile man could be made appear pre-
ently, and he hoped he would meet his
deports.

I then stood up, and told the assembly
the whole of what we heard, how it
first came to be discovered, and that the
king himself had been an ear-witnesse
of it; which the king confirming, the
whole assembly rang with confusion;
and revenge and indignation appeared
in every face.

I then proposed, as we yet knew not
what that secreet comission was which
Nicor was charged with, having enough
against the reft, that Nicor might be
brought forth; and, upon refusal to
answer, be put to the torture.

Nicor appearing before the assembly,
I told him I was commanded by the
king to ask him what comission he
was charged with by Barbarfa, and to
whom. I told him the safest way for
his life, his honour, and his country,
was to make a true confession at first,
or I had authority to put him to the
torture: for, as for flitting and banifh-
ment, as they were too flight to atone
for this offence, he might reft satisfied
his would be of another sort, if he he-
stituated at delivering the thing in it's
full truth.

My prelude terrifying him, he openly
confessed that his last commition was
to several towns, as from the king, and
with his gripfack, to order their sub-
mission to Harlokin, the king not be-
ing in any condition to relieve them;
and that as soon as they had submitted,
Harlokin would be let into this city,
which could not stand against him.

He also declared, that it had been
agreed, and the boundaries settled,
how far Barbarfa, who was to be de-
declared king, and marry Yacombourf,
should govern, and how far Harlokin;
that Barbarfa was to be figned King of
the Baft, and Harlokin King of the
West; and that either of them, on the
other's dying childles, was to inherit
the whole monarchy.

The king declaring this to be all
true, and that by my procurement he
heard it all mentioned but the laft
night between Barbarfa and Yacom-
bourf, as they were solacing them-
theselves in bed, the whole assembly or-
dered them to be brought out, carried
with cords about their necks, and pre-
cipitated into Mount Alkoe.

I then begged they might be suf-
fere to speak for themselves before
execution; and, acquainting them fe-
verally with the evidence, I first asked
Barbarfa
Barbara what he had to say against his sentence. He declared, his ambition, and the easiness of his master's temper, had inflamed him to attempt what had been charged upon him; having, as he thought, a fair opportunity of so doing. I then asked Yaccombourse the same question; she answered me, her ambition had been her sole governor from a child, and I had done my worst in preventing the progress of that; and whatever else I could do was not worth her notice: 'But to have reigned,' says she, 'with some emotion,' was worth the lives of millions, and over-balanced every thing!'

I pleaded hard for Nicor, as I perceived him to be only the favourite's favourite, and not in the scrape for his own views, more than what he might merit from his new master; and as he had declared the truth, and I believed I might make farther use of him, I obtained that he might be only committed to me, and that I might have liberty of pardoning or slitting as I saw fit: and, as I expected, he afterwards proved very useful to me and my designs, and I pardoned him.

Before the assembly rose, a party of the natives of Mount Alkoe were ordered to convey Yaccombourse and Barbara to the mountain, in their grandees, and drop them there; and thus ended the lives of these two aspiring persons.

When I came home, I called Nicor before me—'You know,' says I, 'Nicor, you are obliged to me for this moment of your life; but I don't remind you of it for any return I want to myself; but as you are sensible my endeavours are to serve this state, I offer you life and freedom upon condition you employ your utmost diligence to repair your past conduct, by a free declaration of every thing in your power that may be for the benefit of the kingdom, as you know the springs by which all these bad movements have been set at work: and I desire your opinion how best to counteract the schemes formed, and redress the evils.'

Nicor being fully convinced of his error, and having left his patron, was very submissive; and declared he believed none of the provinces would have gone over to Harlokin, unless they had thought it was the king's order Barbara had asted by, which, by hearing his gripfack, they made no doubt of. He advised to lend express with the king's gripfack to such places as had lately submitted, and to such as were about it, to put a stop to them. I told him I had done that; 'But not by the gripfacks,' says he; 'and unless they see and hear that, they will give no credit to the message.' He then gave me some particular hints in other affairs of no mean consequence; and seeing him truly under concern, and, to my thinking, sincere in what he said, I told him I was an absolute enemy to confinement, and if any person of repute would engage he should be forthcoming upon all occasions, that I might have recourse to him, I would let him have his liberty.

Poor Nicor, as it commonly happens to great men in disgrace, finding himself abandoned by all his friends, after trying every body, dropping some tears, told me next morning he was highly sensible of what a dye his offences had been, for that not one amongst all his former friends would even look upon him in his present circumstances, wherefore he must submit to fate.

Nicor having borne a good character before seduced by Barbara, and knowing that an obliged enemy often becomes the sincerest friend, I pressed him again to try his friends. He told me every body was shy of engaging in such an affair; and that he had rather suffer himself, than meanly to treat any one into an unwilling compliance. 'Come, Nicor,' says I, 'will you be your own security to me? May I take your own word?' He said he could not expect that; for as the terror of slitting lay over him, and in my hands too, he could not answer but he might deceive me, in case he should conceive I had a design against him; which I myself, too, might have from a mistaken motive.

'Why, then, Nicor,' says I, 'you are free; now use your own discretion. I think you will never caution my judgment to be impeached for what I have done; but if you do, I can't condemn myself for it, and hope I shall have no reason to repent it.'

Nicor fell at my feet, embraced them, and was so overcome with my generos-
Peter

Dear Nay, and pray, O my live, as Is artillery take promise but I have muit der upon greet * Nicor self besides care' Explain' Yes,' be the do now Nafgig, quite a No' Nafgig, by And I'll * the I SWEECOAN giddy are Come, duty I at was, pofi^ Then, it afked PUBLICK • Pardon he and henceforth fifty have him done truly, I4S pet and * * * * • KIN— THE BATTLE AND OF ED. NON fee accords?'”

Then Peter thanked his majesty for his acceptance of that act of his duty; and desired to know when he pleaded the operations for the campaign should begin. ‘Ask my father,’ says the king: ‘do you conduct the war, and let him conduct you.’

Then Peter desired to know what number of troops would be requisite. I asked him what number the enemy had; he said, about thirty thousand. ‘Then,’ says I, ‘take you six only, besides the bearers of me and the artillery; and pick me out fifty of the best men you have, as a guard for my person, and send them to me.’

I fliowed those men my cutlasses and pistols, and fliowed them the use and management.
management of them; 'And,' says I, 'as our enemies fight with pikes, keep you at a distance first; and when you would assault, toss by the pike with your hand, and closing in, have at the grunter, and this edge,' (throwing them the sharpness of it) 'will slip it down from shoulder to heel; you need strike but once for it; but be sure come near enough: or,' says I, 'if you find it difficult to turn aside the pike, give it one smart stroke with this, it will cut it in two, and then the point being gone, it will be useless.

These instructions,' says I, 'if rightly observed, will make us conquerors.

The next thing was to settle the order of my march, which I did in the following manner; and, taking leave of the king, I set out.

First, Ten companies of one hundred men, including officers, with each a grip-sack, in ten double lines, fifty abreast.

Secondly, Four hundred bearers of the cannon, with two hundred to the right, the like to the left, as relays.

Thirdly, Two hundred men with the ammunition, stores, hatchets, and other implements.

Fourthly, Fifty body-guards, in two lines.

Fifithly, Myself, borne by eight; with twelve on the right, and as many on the left, for relays.

Sixthly, Two thousand men in columns, on each side the cannon and me; fifty in a line, double lines.

Seventhly, One thousand men in the rear, fifty in a line, double lines.

I consulted with Nafigg, how Harlokin's army lay, that I might avoid the revolted towns, rather chusing to take them in my return; for my design was to encounter Harlokin first; and I did not doubt if I conquered him, but the towns would surrender of course.

When we arrived within a small flight of his army, I caused a halt at a proper place for my cannon; and having pitched them, which I did by several flat stones, on one another to a proper elevation; I loaded them, and also my small arms, consisting of six muskets, and three brace of pistols; and placing my army, two thousand just behind me, two thousand to my right, and the same number to my left;

I gave a strict command for none of them to stir forwards without orders; which Nafigg, who stood just behind me, was to give. I then sent a defiance to Harlokin by a grip-sack; who sent me word, he fought for a kingdom, and would accept it; and, as I heard afterwards, he was glad I did; for since the intelligence I had scattered in his army, they had in great numbers deserted him, and he was afraid it would have proved general. I then putting the end of a match into a pistol-pan with a little powder, by flashing, lighted it; and this I put under my chair, for I sat in that, with my muskets three on each side, a pistol in my right-hand, and five more in my girdle. In this manner I waited Harlokin's coming, and in about an hour we saw the van of his army, consisting of about five thousand men, who flew in five layers, one over another. I had not loaded my cannon with ball, but small sized stones, about sixty in each; and seeing the length of their line, I spread my cannons mouths somewhat wider than their breeches, and then taking my observation by a bright star, for there was a clear dawn all round the horizon, I observed, as I retired to my chair, how that star answered to the elevation of my cannon; and when the foremost ranks, who, not seeing my men stir, were approaching almost over me to fall on them, and had come to my pitch, I fired two pieces of my ordinance at once, and so mauled them, that there dropped about ninety upon the first discharge, together with their commander; the rest, being in flight, and so close together, not being able to turn fast enough to fly, being stopped by those behind them, not only hindered those behind from turning about, but clogged up their own passage. Seeing them in such a prodigious cluster, I so successfully fired two more pieces, that I brought down double the number of the first shot; and then giving the word to fall on, my cutlass-guard, and the pikemen, did prodigious execution. But fearing the main body should advance before we had got in order again, I commanded them to fall back to their former stations, and to let the remainder of the enemy go off.

This did me more good in the event, than if I had killed twice as many; for
for they not only never returned themselves, but flying somet to the right, some to the left, and passing by the two wings of their own army, confounding of six thousand men each, they severely reported, that they were all that was left of the whole van of the army; and that the prediction would certainly be fulfilled, for that their companions had died by fire and smoke. This report struck such terror into each wing, that every one shifted for himself, and never appeared more.

The main battle consisting of about ten thousand men, knowing nothing of what had happened to the wings, (for Harlokin had ordered the wings to take a great compass round to inclose us) hearing we were but a handful, advanced boldly; and as I had ordered my men not to mount too high, the enemy funk to their pitch. When they came nearer, I asked Nafigg who led them, and if it was Harlokin. He told me no, his general, but that he was behind; and Nafigg, begging me to let him try his skill with the general, I consented, they not being yet come to the pitch of my cannon. Nafigg immediately took the grandoee, and advancing singly with one of my cutlasses in his hand, challenged the general in single combat. He like a man of honour, accepting it, ordered a halt, and to it they went, each emulous of glory, and of taking all the advantage he could, so that they suddenly did not strike or push; but sometimes one, then the other, was uppermost, and whirling expeditiously round, met almost breast to breast; when the general, who had not a pike, but a pike-staff, headed with a large stone, gave Nafigg such a stroke on his head, that he reeled and sunk considerably; and I began to be in pain for him, the general lowering after him. But Nafigg springing forward beneath him, and swinging light as air behind the general, had gained his height again before the general could turn about to discern him; and then plunging forward, and receiving a stroke across his left-arm, at the same time he gave the general such a blow near the out-side of the shoulder, as slit the grandoee almost down to his hip, and took away part of the flesh of the left-arm; upon which the general fell fluttering down in vast pain, very near me; but not before Nafigg, in his fall, descending, had taken another severe cut at him.

Immediately upon this defeat, Nafigg again took his place behind me; our army shouting to the skies; but no sooner had the general dropt, but on came Harlokin, with majesty and terror mixt in his looks; and seeming to disdain the air he rode on, waved his men to the attack with his hand. When he came near enough to hear me, I called him vile traitor, to oppose the army of his lawful sovereign; telling him, if he would submit, he should be received to mercy. 'Safe creeping infect!' says Harlokin, 'if thou hast aught to say to me worth hearing, meet me in the air? This hand shall shew thee soon who'll most want mercy; and though I scorn to stoop to thee myself, this messenger shall satisfy the world thou art an impostor, and send thee lifeless back to the fond king that sent thee hither.' With that he hurled a javelin pointed with flint, sharp as a needle at me; but I avoided it. 'This, then,' says I, 'if words will not do, shall justify the truth of our prediction.' And then levelling a musket at him, I shot him through the very heart, that he fell dead within twenty paces of me; but perceiving another to take his room, notwithstanding the confusion my musket made amongst them, I ran to my match, and giving fire to two more pieces of ordnance at the same time, they fell so thick about me, that I had enough to do to escape being crushed to death by them; and the living remainder separating, fled quite away, and put an end to the war. I waited in the field three days, to see if they would make head again; but they were fo far from it, that before I could return, as I found afterwards, most of the revolting provinces had sent their deputies, who themselves carried the first news of the defeat, to beg to be received into mercy; all of whom were detained there, till my return with Harlokin's head.

At my return to Brandleguarf, I was met by the king, the columbs, and almost the whole body of the people; every man, woman, and child, with two sweecoe lights in their hands; which unusual fight in the air, gave me great alarm, till I enquired of Nafigg what it meant; who told me it must
PETER WILKINS.

must certainly be a sweecon, or he knew not what it was. I asking again what he meant by that, he told me it was a particular method of rejoicing he had heard of, but never seen; where- in, if the king goes in triumph, all the people of Brandlegurq, from fifteen to sixty, are obliged to attend him with sweecoes. He said, it was re- ported amongst them, that in Begfur- beck's time there were two of them, but there had been none since.

When we met them, I perceived they had opened into two lines or ranks of a prodigious length; at the farther end of which was the king with innume- rable lights about him; the whole look- ed like a prodigious avenue or viito of lights, bounded at the farther end where the king was, with a pyramid of light. This had the most folemn and magnificent effect on the eye, that any thing of light could possibly have; but as we passed through the ranks, each of the spectators having two lights, one was given to each soldier of the whole army. And then to look backward, as well as forward, the beauty of the scene was inexpressible. We marched all the way amidst the shouts of people, and the found of the gripacks, going very lowly between the ranks; and at length arriving at the pyramid, where the king was, I heard abundance of sweet voices, chanting my actions in triumphal songs; but I could take little notice of these, or of my son with his flagellet amongst them, for the extravag- ant appearance of the pyramid, which seemed to reach the very sky. For, first, there was a long line of a full half mile, which hovered at even height with the two side ranks; in the centre of that, and over it, was the king single, over him, another line, shorter than the first, and again over that, shorter and shorter lines; till, at a pro- digious height, it ended in one single light. These all hovering, kept their stations; while the king darted a little space forward to meet me, and con- gratulate my success; then turning, and preceding me, the whole pyramid turned, and marched before us, sing- ing all the way, to the city; the pyra- mid changing several times into divers forms, as into squares, half-moons, with the horns, sometimes erect, and again reversed, and various other fi- gures; and yet amongst this infinite number of globes, there was not the least glaring or offensive light; but only what was agreeable to the people themselves. As the rear of the army entered the lines, they closed upon it; and followed us into Brandlegurq.

While we passed the city to the palace, the whole body of people kept hovering, till the king and myself were alighted; and then every one alighted where he best could. All the streets and avenues to the palace were blocked up with people, crouding to receive the king's beneficence; for he had proclaimed a feast, and open house-keeping to the people for six days. The king, the colombs, ragans, and great officers of state, with myself, had a magnificent entertainment prepared for in Begfur- beck's great room; and his majesty, after supper, being very impatient to know how the battle went, I told him, the only valorous exploit was perform- ed by my friend Nafgig, who opened the way to victory, by the slaughter of Harlok in's general. Nafgig then rofe, deifying only that so much might be attributed to him, as fortune had acciden- tally thrown into his scale; for it might have been equally his fate, as the general's, to have fallen: 'But ex- cept that skirmish, says he, and some flying cuts at the van, we have had no engagement at all, nor have we lost a single man; Peter only sit- ting in his chair; and commanding the victory, he spoke aloud but thrice; and whispered once to them; but fo powerfully; that having at the two first words laid above three hundred of the enemy at their lengths, and brought Harlok in to his feet, with a whisper, at the third word he con- cluded the war. The whole time, from the first sight of the enemy to their total defeat, took not up more space than one night fairly spend in traversing his majesty's garden. In short, Sir,' says Nafgig, 'your ma- jesty needs no other defence against publick or private enemies, as I can see, than Peter, and my profession, whilst he is with us, can be of little use to the state.'

After these compliments from Naf- gig, and separate ones from the king; and the rest, I told them; it was the highest felicity to me to be made an in- strument by the great Colwar, in free-
ing so mighty a kingdom and considerable a people from the misery of a tyrannical power. 'You live,' says I, so happily, under the mild government of Georgiotti, that it is shocking but to think into what a distressing fate you must have fallen under the power of an usurper, who claiming all as his own by way of conquest, would have reduced you to a miserable servitude. But,' says I, there is, and I am sorry to see it, still amongst you, an evil that you great ones feel not, and yet it cries for redress. Are we not all, from the king to the meanest wretch amongst us, formed with the same members? Do we not all breathe the same air? inhabit the same earth? Are we not all subject to the same disorders? and do we not all feel pain and oppression alike? Have we not all the same senses, the same faculties? and, in short, are we not all equally creatures of, and servants to, the same master, the great Collwar? Would not the king have been a slave, but for the accident of being begotten by one who was a king? and would not the poorest creature amongst us have been the king had he been so begotten? Did you great men, by any superior merit before your births, procure a title to the high stations in which you are placed? No, you did not. Therefore give me leave to tell you what I would have done. As every man has equal right to the protection of Collwar, why, when you have no enemy to distress you, will you distress one another? Consider, you great ones, and act upon this disinterested principle; do another, what you, in his place, would have him do to you: dismiss your slaves, let all men be what Collwar made them, free. But if this unequal distinction amongst you, of man and man, is still retained, though you are at present free from the late disater, it shall be succeeded with more, and heavier. And now, that you may know I would not have every man a lord, nor every one a beggar, remember, I would only have every serving-man at liberty to chuse his own master, and every master his own man: for he that has property and benefits to befall, will never want dependants, for the sake of those benefits, to serve him, as he that has them not must serve for the sake of obtaining them. But then let it be done with free-will; he that then serves you will have an interest in it, and do it, for his own sake, with a willing mind; and you, who are served, will be tenderer and kinder to a good servant, as knowing by a contrary usage you shall lose him. I desire this may now be declared to be so, or your reasons, if any there are, against it.'

One of the ragans said, he thought I spoke what was very just, and would be highly acceptable to Collwar. Then two of the colombs rose to speak together, and after a short compliment who should begin, they both declared they only rose to testify their confents.

The king referring it to me, and the colombs confenting, I ordered freedom to be proclaimed through the city; so that every one appeared at their usual duties, to serve their own masters for a month, and then to be at liberty to come to fresh agreement with them, or who else they pleased.

'This, Sir,' says I, to the king, 'will now be a day of joy indeed, to those poor hearts who would have been in no fear of losing before, let who would have reigned, for can any man believe a slave cares who is uppermost? he is but a slave still. But now,' says I, 'those who were so before, may by industry gain property; and then their own interest engages them to defend the state.

'There is but one thing more I will trouble you with now—and that is, says I to the ragans, 'is, that we all meet at the mouch to-morrow, to render Collwar thanks for the late, and implore future, favour.' And this passed without any contradiction.

When we met, the poor ragans were at a great loss for want of their Image, not knowing what to do or say: for their practice had been to prostrate themselves on the ground, making several odd gestures; but whether they prayed, or only seemed to do so, no one knew.

While the people were gathering, I called to a ragan, seeing him out of character. 'Suppose,' said I, 'for I see you want your Image) you and your
your brethren had received a favour of the king; and you was deputed by them to thank him, you would scarce be at a loss to express your gratitude to him, and tell him how highly you all esteemed his benefits, hoping you should retain a just sense of them, and behave yourselves as dutiful subjects for the future; and then desire him to keep you still in his protection. And this, says I, as you believe in such a Being as Colwar, who understands what you say, you may with equal courage do to him, keeping but your mind intent upon him, as if you saw him present. — Indeed, says he, I believe you are right; we may do; but it is a new thing, and you must excuse us if we do it not so well at first.

I found I had a very apt scholar, for after he had began, he made a most extraordinary prayer in regular order, the people standing very attentive. It was not long, but he justly observed the points I hinted to him.

When he had done, another and another went on, till we had heard ten of them, and in every one something new, and very a-propriet; and several of them afterwards confessed, they never had the like satisfaction in their lives, for they had new hearts and new thoughts, they said.

We spent the sixth-day feast in every gaiety imaginable, and especially in dancing, of which they were very fond, in their way; but it was not so agreeable to me as my own country way, there being too much antick in it. New deputies daily arrived from the revolted towns; and several little republics, not claimed by Georgiotti before, begged to be taken under his protection; so that, in one week, the king saw himself not only released from the dread of being driven from his throne, but courted by some, submitted to by others, and almost at the summit of glory a sovereign can attain to.

CHAP. XV.

A VISITATION OF THE REVOLTED PROVINCES PROPOSED BY PETER—HIS NEW NAME OF THE COUNTRY RECEIVED—RELIGION SETTLED IN THE WEST—SLAVERY ABOLISHED THERE—LASMEEL RETURNS WITH PETER—PETER TEACHES HIM LETTERS—THE KING SURPRISED AT WRITTEN CORRESPONDENCE—PETER DESCRIBES THE MAKE OF A BEAST TO THE KING.

The festival being over, the colambs begged leave to depart; but the king, who now did nothing without me, consulted with me, if it was yet proper. I told him, as things had so long been in confusion in the west, that though the provinces had made their submission, yet the necessity of their circumstances, and the general terror, might have caused them only to dissemble till their affairs were composed again; and that as it was more than probable some relations of the deceased Harlokin, or other popular person, might engage them again in another revolt, I thought it would not be improper to advise with his colambs about the establishment of the present tranquillity, and not by too great a security give way to future commotions; and as all the colambs were then present, it might be proper to summon them once more.

When they were met, the king declared the more particular satisfaction he took in that meeting than he had heretofore done, when they had been put to it for means to secure their lives and properties; 'For now,' says he, our deliberations must turn upon securing our new acquisitions, and on settling those provinces which, till now, have never fallen under my power. But,' says he, 'I shall refer it to Peter to propose to you what at present seems most necessary for you to consider of; and, that adjusted, shall dismiss you.'

I told them, that as the too sudden healing of wounds in the body natural, before the bottom was clean and uncorrected, made them liable to burst out again with greater malignity, so wounds in the body political, if skinned over only, without probing and cleaning the source and spring from whence they arose, would rankle and fret within, till a proper opportunity, and then burst forth again with redoubled violence. I would therefore propose a visitation of the several provinces;
an enquiry into their conduct; an examination into the lives and principles of the colombs, the inferior officers, and magistrates; and either to retain the old, or appoint new, as there should be occasion. 'This visitation I would have performed by his majesty—and so many of you the honourable colombs,' says I, 'as he shall see fit should attend him in royal state, that his new subjects may see his majesty, and hear his most gracious words; and being sensible of his good disposition towards them, may be won by his equity and justice, to a zealous submission to his government, which nothing but the perception of their own felicity can establish in the heart. This, I don't doubt, will answer the end I propose, and consolidate the peace and happiness of Norm—Normus—I must say Doorpt Swangeanti.'

Hearing me heetate at the word Normbadgrufit, and call it Doorpt Swangeanti, the whole assembly rang with 'Doorpt Swangeanti!' and, at last, came to a resolution that the weft being now united again to the east, the whole dominions should be called Sai's Doorpt Swangeanti, or the Great Flight Land.

They approved the visitation, and all offered to go with the king, but insisted I should be of the party; which agreeing to do, I chose me out two of the most knowing ragans, to teach the new religion amongst them; for in every project I had my view to advance religion.

Some were for having the deputies released, and dispatched with notice of the king's intentions; but I objecting, that they might disoblige their confinement, and possibly raise reports prejudicial to our proceedings, it was thought better to take them with us, and go ourselves as soon as possible.

We set out with a prodigious retinue, first to the right, in order to sweep round the whole country, and take all the towns in our way, and occasionally enter the middle parts, as the towns lay commodious.

We were met by the magistrates and chief officers of each district, at some distance from each city, with strings about their necks, and the crafty instrument borne before them in much humility. His majesty said but little to them on the way, but ordered them to precede him to the city, and conduct him to the colamb's house; when he was commanded to surrender his employment to his majesty, as did all the other officers who held posts under him. Then an examination was taken of their lives, characters, and behaviour in their stations; and finding most of them had behaved well to the government they had lived under, for their plea was, they had found things under an usurpation, and being so, that government was natural to them, having singly no power to alter it;) upon their perfect submission to the king, and solemn engagement to advance and maintain his right, they received their commissions anew from his majesty's own mouth. 'But where any one had been cruel or oppressive to the subjects, or committed any notorious crime, or breach of truft, (for the meanest persons had liberty to complain) he was rejected, and for the most part sent to Crafuldoorpt, to prevent the ill effects of his disgrace.

We having disposed but five colombs, and a few inferior officers, the moderation and justice of our proceedings gave the utmost satisfaction both to the magistrates and people.

Having obseved at Brandleguarp abundance of the small images my wife had spoken of, and thinking this a proper opportunity to shew my resentment against them, I ordered several of the ragans of the west before me, and asked what small images they had amongst them. One, who spoke for the rest, told me, very few, he believed; for he had scarce had any brought to him to be bleffed. 'Where,' says I, 'is your Great Image?' He told me, 'At Youk.'—And have not the people here many small ones?—'Very few,' says he; for they have not been forced upon us long.—'How forced upon you?' says I; 'don't the people worship them?—'A small number now do,' says he. 'Pray speak out,' says I. 'When might you not worship them?'—'Never, that I know of,' says he, 'in our state, till about ten years ago, when Harlokin obliged us to it.—'What, did you not worship them before?' says I. 'No,' says he, 'never since it has been a separate kingdom; for we would follow the old
The old ragan's advice of worshipping Collwar, which they not admitting of, the state was divided between us who would, and them who would not, come into the ragan's doctrine: and though Harlokin was a zealous image-worshipper, yet all he could do, would not bring the people heartily into it, for Collwar never wanted a great majority. This pleased me prodigiously, being what was never hinted to me before; and I resolved not to let my scheme be a loser by it.

As we were to visit Youk in about eight days, I summoned the ragans and people to meet at the mouch; there recounting the great things done by Collwar in all nations. This I could make appear, says I, by many examples; but as you have one even at your own towns, I need go no farther.

I must begin in ancient times, when, I presume, you all worshipped an idol; have you any tradition before this? They said, No;—This Image, says I, was worshipped in Begfurbeck's days, when an old ragan, whole mind Collwar had enlightened with the truth, would have withdrawn your reverence from the Image, to the original Collwar himself; you would not confent; he threatens you, but promises success to Begfurbeck, who did confent; and he had it to an old age. Then those who would also confent, were so far encouraged as to be able to form an independent kingdom. Could nobody yet fix the cause? was it not apparent Collwar was angry with the e aft, that would not follow the old ragan; and cherished the whole, who would? But, to be short, let us apply the present instance, and sure it will convince us who is right, who wrong.

So long as the well followed Collwar, they flourished, and the e aft declined; but no sooner had the well degenerated under the command of Harlokin; and the e aft by my means had embraced Collwar, but the tables were turned: the e aft is found weighty, and the well kicks the beam. These things whose fees not, is blind indeed: therefore let publication be made, for the destruction of all small images; and let the harbourers of them, contrary to this order, be flit: and for myself, I will destroy this mother-monster. Take you, holy ragans, care to destroy the brood. And having said this, I hacked the new idol to pieces.

I ordered proclamation for abolishing slavery, under the restrictions used at Brandleguarp: and thus having composed the well, and given a general satisfaction, we returned, almost the whole well accompanying us, till the e aft received us; and never was for happy an union, or more present to testify it, since the creation, I believe.

I ordered several of the principal men's sons to court; in order for employments, and to furnish out future colums; and this I did, as knowing each country would rather approve of a member of their own body for their head, than a stranger; and, in my opinion, it is the most natural union. And then breeding them under the eye of the king eight or ten years, or more, they are, as it were, naturalized to him too, and in better capacity to serve both king and country.

As my head was constantly at work for the good of this people, I turned the most trifling incidents into some use or other; and made the narrowest prospects extend to the vastest distances. I shall here instance in one only. There was at Youk a private man's son, whom by mere accident I happened to ask some flight question of; and he giving me, with a profound respect and graceful assurance, a most pertinent answer; that, and the manner of its delivery, gave me a pleasure, which upon farther discourse with him, was contrary to custom, very much increased; for I found in him an extensive genius, and a desire for my conversation. I desired his father to put him under my care, which the old man, as I was then in fo great repute, readily agreed to; and his son desiring nothing more, I took him with me to Brandleguarp. I soon procured him a pretty post of but small duty, for I had purposed other employment for him, but of sufficient significance to procure him respect. I took great delight in talking with him on different subjects, and observed by his questions upon them, which often puzzled me; or his answers to them, he had a most pregnant fancy and surprizing solidity, joined to a continual and unwearyed application.
application. I frequently mentioning his writings, and letters to him, and telling him what great things might be attained that way; his inquisitive temper, and the schemes he had formed thereon, put me upon thinking of several things I should never have hit upon without him. I considered all the ways I could contrive to teach him letters; and letting him into my design, he asked me how I did to make a letter. I described a pen to him, and told him I put a black liquor into it, and as I drew that along upon a flat white thing we made use of, called paper, it would make marks which way ever I drew it, into what shape I pleased. ‘Why then,’ says he, ‘any thing that will make a mark upon another thing as I please, will do.’—‘True,’ says I, ‘but what shall we get that will make a black mark? We were entering farther into this debate; but the king finding for me, I left him unfurnished. I stayed late with the king that night, so did not see Laffmeel (for that was his name) till next night, wondering what was become of him. I asked him then, where he had been all the day. He told me he had been looking for a pen and paper. I laughed, and asked him if he had found them. ‘Yes,’ says he, ‘or something that will do as well; so he opened one side of his grainde, and shewed me a large flat leaf, smooth and pulpy, very long and wide, and about a quarter of an inch thick, almost like an Indian fig-leaf. ‘And what am I to do with this?’ says I. ‘To mark it,’ says he, ‘and see where you mark.’—‘With what?’ says I. ‘With this,’ says he, putting his hand again into his grainde, and taking out three or four strong sharp prickles. I looked at them both; and, clapping him on the head, ‘Laffmeel,’ says I, ‘if you and I were in England, you should be made a privy-councilor.’—‘What, won’t it do, then?’ says he. I told him we would try. ‘I thought,’ says he, ‘it would have done very well; for I marked one all about, and though I could not see much at first, by that time I had made an end, that I did first was quite of a different colour from the leaf, and I could see it as plain as could be.’ I told him, as he was of an age to comprehend what I meant, I would take another method with him than with a child; so I reasoned from sentences, backwards to words, and from them to syllables, and so on to letters. I then made one, the vowel a, told him it’s found, and added a consonant to it, and told him that part of the sound of each distinct letter put together, as the two letters themselves were, made another sound, which I called a syllable; and that joining two or more of them together, made a word, by putting the same letters together as made the sounds of those syllables which made that word. Then setting him a copy of letters, which with very little difficulty were to be drawn upon the leaf, and telling him their sounds, I left him to himself; and when he had done, though I named them but twice over, his memory was so strong as to retain the sounds, as he called them, of every one but B, L, and Q.

In two months time I made, him master of any thing I wrote to him; and, as he delighted in it, he wrote a great deal himself; so that we kept an epistolary correspondence, and he would set down all the common occurrences of the day, as what he heard and saw, with his remarks on divers things.

One day, as the king and I were walking in the gardens, and talking of the customs of my country, and about our wars, telling him how our soldiers fought on horseback, the king could not conceive what I meant by an horse. I told him my wife had laid there were neither beasts nor fishes in her country; which I was very much surprized at, considering how we were bounded with both; ‘And therefore,’ says I, ‘to tell your majesty, that an horse is a creature with four legs, you must naturally believe it to be somewhat like a man with four legs.’—‘Why, truly,’ says he, ‘I believe it is; but has it the grainde?’ I could not forbear smilling, even at his majesty; and wanted to find some similitude to compare it to, to carry the king’s mind that way; for else he would sooner, I thought, conceive it like a tree or a mountain, than what it really was; and as I was musing, it came into my head, I had given Laffmeel a small print of an horse, which I found in one of the captain’s pockets at Grauvedolet, and believing it to be the stamp of a tobacco-paper, had kept
kept it to please the children with; so I told the king I believed I could shew him the figure of an horse. He told me it would much oblige him.

Seeing several of the guards waiting at the garden-arch, I looked, and at last found one of Lamieel's leaves in the garden, and cutting one of them up with my knife, I took the point of that, and wrote to Lamieel to send me by the bearer the picture of an horse I gave him, that I might shew it the king. And calling one of the guards, 'Carry that to Lamieel,' says I: 'He is, I believe, in my apartment, and bring me an answer directly.' Then falling into discourse again with the king, and presently turning at the end of the walk, I saw the same guard again. Says I, 'You cannot have brought me an answer already.'—

You have not told me,' says he, 'what to bring you an answer to.'—

Nor shall I,' says I; 'do as you are bid;' for I perceived then what the fellow stuck at. He walked off with the leaf, but very discontentedly. The king said he wondered how I could act such a contradiction. 'This, father,' says he, 'is not what I expected from you; to order a man to bring an answer, without giving him a message.' I desired his patience only till the man came back. 'Presently,' says the king, 'Here he comes!'—'Well,' says he, 'what an answer?'—'Sir,' says the fellow, 'I have only had the walk for my pains; for he sent it back again, and a little white thing with it.'—

'Ha, ha!' says the king, 'I thought to come, father, own you have once been in the wrong; for I am sure you intended to give him a message, but having forgot it, would not submit to be told of your mistake by a guard.' I looked very grave, reading what Lamieel had wrote; which was to tell me he had obeyed my orders by sending the horse; for he was just then drawing it out upon a leaf.

'Come, come,' says the king, 'give the man his message, father, and let him go again.'—'Sir,' says I, 'there is no need of that, he has punctually obeyed me; and Lamieel was then at the table in my oval chamber with a leaf, and this picture in my hand, before him.'

The king was ready to sink when I said so, and shewed the print. 'Truly, father,' says he, 'I have been to blame to question you; for though these things are above my comprehension, I am not to think any thing beyond your skill.' I made no reply to it; but shewing the king the picture, the guard sneaked off, and glad he was; I believe, he could do so.

I went then upon the explanation of my horse; and, answering fifty questions about him, at last he asked what his inside was; 'Exactly the same as your majesty's,' said I. 'And can he eat and breathe too?' says he. 'Just as you can,' says I. 'Well,' says he, 'I would never have believed there had been such a creature; what would I give for one of them!' I set forth the divers other uses we put them to, besides the wars; and by the picture, with some supposed alterations, I described a cow, a sheep, and numerous other quadruped; my account of which gave him great pleasure.

CHAPTER XVI.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—A RISING OF FORMER SLAVES ON THAT ACCOUNT—TAKES A VIEW OF THE CITY—DESCRIPTION OF IT, AND OF THE COUNTRY—HOT AND COLD SPRINGS.

HAVING now some leisure time on my hands to consider over my own affairs, I had thoughts of transporting my family, with all my effects, to Saal Doorpt Swangeant; but yet had no mind to relinquish all thought of my ship and cargo; for the greatest part of this was still remaining, I having had but the pickings through the gulp. I once had a mind to have gone myself; but considering the immense distance over sea, though I had once come safe, I thought I ought not to tempt Providence, where my presence was not absolutely necessary.

Nafeg, to whose care and conduct any enterprise might be trusted, offered his service to go and execute any commands I should give him. His only difficulty, he said, was, that it would be impossible for him to remember the different names of many things, which he had no idea of to convey the knowledge of them to his mind when he saw them; but barring that, he doubted not to give me satisfaction. I told him I would send an assistant with him, who
who could remember whatever I once told him; and that I might not burden his memory with names only, Lasmeel should carry his memory with him; and that he, Nafig, should only have the executive part.

Lasmeel, who had sat waiting an opportunity to put in for a share in the adventure, having a longing desire to see the ship, told Nafig he had a peculiar art of memory, so as to remember whatever he would as long as he pleased; and that if he carried that with him, they need fear no mistakes.

The king having granted me as many of his guards as I pleaded, for the carriage of my things, we appointed them to be ready on the fourth day; when Nafig and Lasmeel set out with them.

I ordered Lasmeel, however, to be with me the next morning, that we might set down proper instructions; which I told him would be very long, and that he must bring a good number of leaves with him.

When Lasmeel entered my chamber next morning, he informed me that the whole city was in an uproar, especially those who had been freed by me.

What I says I, have they so soon forgot their subjection, to misapply their liberty already? But step and bring me word what's the matter, and order some of the ringleaders herein to me.

Lasmeel upon enquiry found, that it had been given out I was going to leave the country, and they all said, wherever I went they were determined to go and settle with me; for if I left them they should be reduced to slavery again. However, he brought some of them to me; and upon my telling them I thanked them for their affection to me, but blamed them for shewing it in so tumultuous a manner, and that I was so far from intending to leave them, that I was sending for my family and effects, in order to settle amongst them, they rejoiced very much, and told me they would carry the good news to their companions, and diffuse immediately: but I was now in more perplexity than before, for they having signified my designs to the rest, they rushed into the gallery in such numbers, that they forced up to my very chamber. I told them this was an unprecedented manner of using a person they pretended a kindness for; and told them, if they made use of such risings to express their gratitude to me, it would be the direct means to oblige me to leave them; 'For,' says I, 'do you think I can be safe in a king's dom where greater deference is paid to me, than to the crown?' They begged my pardon, they said, and would obey me in any thing; but the present trouble was only to offer their services to fetch my family and goods; or to do anything else I should want them for; and if I would favour them in that, they would retire directly. I told them, when I had considered of it they should hear from me; and this again quieted them.

This disturbance not only took up much of my time, which I could have better employed, but put me to a nonplus, how to come off with them; till I sent Maleck to tell them, though I sent a great value upon their esteem, yet after what had passed, it would be the most unadvisable thing in nature for me to accept their kindness; for having before requested a body of men of the king, as he had graciously granted them, it would be preferring them to the king, should I now relinquish his grant, and make use of their offer; and after this I heard no more of it.

I had scarce met with a more difficult task than to fix exact rules for the conduct of my present undertaking, there being so many things to be expressed, wherein the least perplexity arising, might have caused both delay and damage; for I was not only forced to set down the things I would have brought, but the manner and method of packing and securing them; but, as Lasmeel could read my writing to Pedro at home, and Youwarkee on board, it would be a means, though far from an expeditious one, of bringing matters into some order; and after I had done, as I thought, I could have enumerated many more things, and was obliged to add an et cetera to the end of my catalogue; and while they were ready for flight, I added divers other particulars and circumstances. Nay, when they were even upon the grandee, I recollected the most material thing of all; for my greatest concern was, having broke up so many of my chests, to find package for the things; I say, even so late as that, I betook myself of the several great water-casks I had on board, that would hold an
Having dispatched my caravan, and
being all alone, I called Quilly the
next morning, and telling him I had
thoughts of viewing the country, I
bade him prepare to go with me.

I had now been here above six
months, and yet upon coming to walk
greavely about the city, I found myself
as much a stranger to the knowledge
of the place as if that had been the
first day of my arrival, though I had
been over it several times in my chair.

This city is not only one of, but
actually the most curious piece of work
in the world, and consists of one im-
menfe entire stone of a considerable
height, and it may be seven miles in
length, and near as broad as it is long.
The streets, and habitable part of it,
are scooped, as it were, out of the solid
stone, to the level with the rest of the
country, very flat and smooth at bot-
tom, the rock rising perpendicular
from the streets on each side. The
figure of the city is a direct square;
each side about six miles long, with a
large open circle in the centre of the
square, about a mile in diameter; and
from each of the sides of the outer
streets to the opposite side, runs an-
other street, cutting the centre of the
circle as in the figure.

Along the whole face of the rock,
bounding the streets and the circle,
there are arch-ways; those in the cir-
cle, and the four cross streets, for the
gentry and better people; and those in
the outer streets, for the meaner; and it
is as easy to know as by a sign, where
a great man lives, by the grandeur of
his entrance, and lavish distribution of
the pillars, carving, and statues, about
his portico, within and without: for
as they have no doors, you may look
in, and are not forbid entrance; and
though it should look odd to an En-
lish reader, that an Englishman should
speak with pleasure of a land of dark-
ness, as that almost was, yet I am fa-
satisfied, whoever shall see it after me,
will be perfused, that for the real
grandeur of their entrances, and for
the magnificence of the apartments
and sculpture, no part of the universe
can produce the like; and though
within doors there is no other manner
of light than the sweecoes, yet that,
when you are once used to it, is so
agreeable and free from all noisome fa-
vour, that I never once regretted the
lofs of the fun within doors, though
I often have when abroad; but then
that would be injurious to the proper
inhabitants, though they can no more
see in total darkness than myself.

I have been over some of these pri-
ivate houses, which contain, it may be,
 thirty rooms, great and small, some
higher, some lower, full of sweecelu-
lights, and extremely well proportion-
ed and beautiful.

The king’s palace, with all the a-
partments, stands in, and takes up,
one full fourth-part of the square of
the whole city; and is, indeed, of itself
a perfect city.

There is no great man’s house with-
out one or more long galleries, for the
ladies to divert themselves at divers
sports in; particularly at one like our
bowls on a bowling-green, and at
somewhat like nine-holes, at which
they play for wines, and drink a great
deal, for none of them will intoxicate.

In my walk and survey of the city,
one of the columns being making a
house to reside in when at Brandle-
guarp, I had the curiosity to go in. I
saw there abundance of botts stand
filled with a greenish liquor, and skil-
ed Quilly what that was. He said, it
was what the stone-men used in mak-
ing the houses. I proceeded farther
in.
in, where I saw several men at work, and stayed a good while to observe them. Each man had a bottle of this liquor in his left-hand, and towards a large bank of stone, it may be thirty feet high, reaching forward up to the ceiling of the place, and ascending by steps from bottom to top; the workmen standing some on one step, some on another, pouring on this liquor with their left-hands, and with their right holding a wooden tool, shaped like a little spade: I observed wherever they poured on this water, a smoke arose for a little space of time, and then the place turned white, which was scraped off like fine powder with the spade-handle; and then pouring new liquor, he scraped again, working all the while by sreecoe-lights.

Having my watch in my pocket, I measured a spot of a yard long, about a foot high, and a foot and a half on the upper flat, to see how long he would be fetching down that piece; and he got it away in little above two hours. By this means I came to know how they made their houses: for I had neither seen any tool I thought proper, nor even iron itself, except my own, since I came into the country. Upon enquiry, I found that the scrapings of this stone, and a portion of common earth, mixed with a water they have, will cement like plaster; and they use it in the small ornamental work of their buildings. I then went farther into this house, where I saw one making the figure of a glummi by the same method; but it standing upright in the solid rock against the wall, the workman held his liquor in an open shell, and dipping such stuff as my bed was made of, bound up in short rolls, some larger, some less, into the liquor, he touched the figure, and then scraped till he had reduced it into a perfect piece.

It is impossible to imagine how this work rides away; for in ten months time after I saw it, this house was completed, having a great number of fine, large, and lofty rooms in it, exquisitely carved to all appearance.

My wonder ceased as to the palace, when I saw how easily this work was done; but sure there is no other such room in the world as Begfurbeck's, that I described above.

The palace, as I said before, taking up one quarter of the city, opens into four streets by four different arches; and before one of the sides, which I call the front, is a large triangle, formed by the entrance out of one of the crofs streets, and the two ends of the front of the palace. Along the lower front of it, all the way runs a piazza of considerable height, supported by vast round columns, which seemed to bear up the whole front of the rock; over which was a gallery of equal length, with balustrades along it, supported with pillars of a yet finer make; and over that a pediment with divers figures, and other work, to the top of the rock; which being there quite even for it's whole length, was inclosed with balustrades between pedestals all the way; on which stood the statues of their ancient kings, so large as to appear equal to the life. The other two sides of the triangle were dwellings for divers officers belonging to the palace. Under the middle-arch of the piazza, was the way into the palace, through a long, spacious arched passage, whose farther end opened into a large square; on each side of this passage were large stair-cafes, if I may so call them, by which you ascend gradually, and without steps, into the upper apartments.

The next morning we took another walk, for I told Quilly I had a mind to take a prospect of the country; we then went out at the back arch of the palace, as we had the day before at one of the sides, there being a like passage through the rock from that we went out at, to an opposite arch leading into the garden. I saw, we went out at the back-arch, and after passing a large quadrangle with lodgings all round it, we ascended through a cut in the rock to a large flat, where we plainly saw the black mountain with it's top in the very sky, the sides of which afforded numberless trees, though the ground within view afforded very little verdure, or even shrubs. But the most beautiful sight from the rock was, to see the people come home loaded from the mountain, and from the woods, with, it may be, forty pound weight each on their backs; and mounting over the rock, to see them dart along the streets to their several dwellings, over the heads of thousands of others walking in all parts of the streets.
frets, while others were flying other ways. It was very pleasant to see a man walking gravely in one street, and as quick as thought to see him over the rock, settled in another, perhaps two miles distant.

The near view of the country seeming so barren, naturally led me to ask Quilly from whence they got provision for so many people as the city contained, which, to be sure, could not be less than three hundred thousand. He told me, that they had nothing but what came from the great forest, or the skirts of the mountain. 'But for the grain of it, and some few outward marks,' says I, 'I could have sworn I had eaten some of my country beef the other day at the king's table.'—'I don't know what your beef, as you call it, is; but I am sure we have nothing here but the fruit of some tree or shrub, that ever I heard of.'—'I wonder,' says I, 'Quilly, how your cooks dress their victims. I have eaten many things boiled, and otherwise dressed hot, but have seen no rivers, or water, since I came into this country, except for drinking, or washing my hands; and I don't know where that comes from. And another thing,' says I, 'surprises me, though I see no fun as we have to warm the air, you are very temperate in the town, and it is seldom cold here; but I neither see fire nor smoke.'—'We have,' says Quilly, 'several very good springs under the palace, both of hot water and cold; and I don't know what we should do with fires, we see the dead of them sufficiently at Mount Alkoe. Our cooks dress their fruits at the hot springs.'—'That is a fancy,' says I; 'they cannot boil them there.'—'I am sure we have no other dressing,' says he. 'Well, Quilly,' says I, 'we will go home the way you told me of; and to-morrow you shall show me the springs: but, pray, how come you to be so much afraid of Mount Alkoe? I suppose your eyes won't bear the light; is not that all?'—'No, no,' says Quilly, 'that is the country of bad men; some of us have flown over there accidentally, when the mountain has been cool, as it is sometimes for a good while together, and have heard such noises as would frighten any honest man out of his senses; for there they beat and punish bad men.' I could not make much of his story, nor did I enquire farther; for I had before determined, if possible, to get over thicker. As we were now come into the garden, I ordered Quilly to get ready my dinner, and I would come in presently.

We went next morning to view the springs; and, indeed, it was a sight well worth considering: we were in divers offices under the rock, (Quilly carrying two globe-lights before me) in which were springs of very clear water, some of hot, and some of cold, rising within two or three inches of the surface of the floor. We then went into the kitchen, which was bigger than I ever saw one of our churches, and where were a great number of these springs, the hot all boiling full speed day and night, and smoking like a caldron, the water rising through very small chinks in the stone into basins, some bigger, some less; and they had several deep stone-jars to get any thing to boil in. But what was the most surprising was, you should see a spring of very cold water within a few feet of one of hot, and they never rise higher or sink lower than they are. I talked with the matter-cook, an ingenious man, about these; and he told me they lie in this manner all over the rocky part of the country, and that the first thing any one does in looking out for an house is to see for the water, whether hot and cold may be found within the compass he designs to make use of; and, finding that, he goes on, or else searches another place. And, he told me, where this convenience was not in great plenty, the people did not inhabit, which made the towns all so very populous. He said, too, that those warm springs made the air more wholesome about the towns than in other parts where there were none of them. I thanked him for his information, which finished my search for that time.

C H A P. XVII.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—PENDELEHAMBRE GIVES A FABULOUS ACCOUNT OF THE PEOPLESING OF THAT COUNTRY—THEIR POLICY AND GOVERNMENT—PE-
The days hanging heavy on my hands till the arrival of my family, I sent Pendlehamby word, that, as I had sent for my family and effects, in order to settle in this country, and expected them very soon, I should be glad of his, my brother, and sister’s company, to welcome them on their arrival.

My father came alone, which gave me an opportunity of informing myself in the rife and policy of the state, as I purposed to take several farther steps in their affairs, if they might prove agreeable and consistent; for hitherto, having had only slight sketches or hints of things, I could form no just idea of the whole of their laws, customs, and government. Explaining myself, therefore, to him, I begged his instruction in those particulars.

"Son Peter," says my father, "you have already done too much in a short time to leave any room to think you can do no more; and as you have hitherto directed your own proceedings with such infinite success, neither the king nor colonists will interpose against your inclination, but give you all the advice in our powers; and I shall esteem your selecting me for that purpose no small honour."

Know, then, that this state, by the tradition of our rags, has subsisted eleven thousand years; for, before that time, the great mountain Eminia, then not far from the Black Mountain, but now fallen and sunk in the sea, roaring and raging in it’s own bowels for many ages, at last burst asunder with great violence, and threw up numberless unformed fleshy masses to the very stars; two of which happening in their passage to touch the side of the Black Mountain, (for all the rest fell into the sea and were lost,) lodged there, and lying close together as they grew, united to each other till they were joined in one; and in process of time, by the dews of Heaven, became a glumm and a gawrey; but being so linked together by the adhesion of their flesh, they were obliged both to move which way either would: living thus a long time in great love and fondness for each other, they had but one inclination, left both should be sufferers upon the least disagreement.

In process of time they grew tired of each other’s constant society, and one willing to go here, and the other there, bred perpetual disorders between them; for prevention whereof, for the future, they agreed to cut themselves asunder with sharp stones. The pain, indeed, was intolerable during the operation; but, however, they effected it, and the wounds each received were very dangerous, and a long time before they were perfectly healed: but at length, sometimes agreeing, sometimes not, they begat a son, whom they called Perigen, and a daughter they called Philella. These two, as they grew up, despising their parents who lived on the top of the mountain, ventured to descend into the plains, and living upon the fruits they found there, sheltered themselves in this very rock.

Mean time, the old glumm and gawrey, having lived to a great age, were so infirm, that neither of them was able to walk for a long time; till one day, being near each other, and trying to rise by the assistance of each other, they both got up, and leaning upon and supporting each other, they also walked commodiously: this mutual assistance kept them in good-humour a great while; till, one day, passing along near hoxime, they both fell in.

Perigen and Philella had several children in the plains; who, as they grew up, increasing, spread into remote parts, and peopled the country; at last, one of them being a very passionate man, at the instigation of his wife, became the first murderer, by slaying his father. This so enraged the people, that the murderer and his wife, in abhorrence of the fact, were conveyed to Mount Alkoe, where was then only a very narrow deep pit, into which they were both thrown headlong; but the persons who carried them thither had scarce retired from the mouth of the pit, when it burst out with fire, raging prodigiously, and has kept burning ever since. Arco and Telamine (the mur..."
deter and his wife) lived seven thousand years in the flames; till having with their teeth wrought a pailage through the side of the mountain, they begat a new generation about the foot of the mountain; and having brought fire with them, resolved to keep it burning ever after in memory of their escape; and power being given them over bad men, they and their progeny are now wholly employed in beating and tormenting them.

A great while after Arco and Telamine were thus disposed of, the people of this country multiplying; it happened, one year, that all the fruits were so dry, that the people, not able to live any longer upon the moisture of them only, as they had always done before, and fearing all to be confumned with drought, one of their ragans praying very much, and promising to make an image to Collwar, and preserve it for ever, if he would send them but moisture, in one night's time the earth cast up such a flood, that they were forced to mount on the rocks for fear of drowning; but the next day it all sunk away again, except several little bubbles which remained in many places for a long time, and the people lived only on the moisture they sucked from the stone where those bubbles settled for many years; for they found that the water arose to the height of the surface, and no higher; and where they found most of those chinks and bubbles, they settled, and formed cities, living altogether in holes of the rock; till one Lallio, having found out the art of crumbling the rock to dust by a liquor he got from the trees, and working himself a noble house in the rock, in the place where our palace now stands, he told them, if they would make him their king, they should each have such an house as his own. To this they agreed, and then he discovered the secret to them.

This Lallio directed the cutting out this whole city, divided the people into colonies where the waters were most plentiful; and while half the people worked at the streets and houses, the other half brought them provisions. In short, he grew so powerful, that no one dared dispute his commands; all which authority he transmitted to his successors, who finding by the increase of the people, and the many divisions of them, that they grew insolent and ungovernable, they appointed a colamb in every province, as a vice-king, with absolute authority over all causes, except murder and treason, which are referred to the king and colambins moucheratt.

As we had no want but of victuals and habitations, the king, when he gave a colambat, gave also the lands and the fruits thereof, together with all the hot and cold springs, to the colamb, who again distributed parcels to the great officers under him, and they part of theirs to the meaner officers under them, for their subsistence, with such a number of the common people as was necessary in respect to the dignity of the post each enjoyed, who for their services are fed by their masters.

In all cafes of war, the king lays before the moucheratt the number of his own troops he designs to send; when each colamb's quota being settled at such a proportion of the whole, he forthwith sends his number from out of his own lalks, and also from the several officers under him; so that every man, let the number be ever so great, can be at the rendezvous in very few days.

We have but three professions, besides the ragans and foldiers, among us, and these are cooks, house-makers, and pike-makers, of which every colamb has several among his lalks; and these, upon the new regulation, will be the only gainers, as they may work where they please, and according to their skill be their provision; but how the poor labourers will be the better for it, I cannot see.

Dear Sir, says I, there are, you see, amongst lalks, some of such parts, that it is great pity they should be confined from flowing them; and my meaning in giving liberty is in order for what is to follow; that is, for the introduction of arts amongst you. Now, every man who has natural parts will exert them, when any art is laid before him; and he will find so much delight in making new discoveries, that, did no profit attend
it, the satisfaction of the discovery
to a prying genius would compensate
the pains: but I propose a profit also
to the artificer. — 'Why, what pro-
fit,' says my father, 'can arise but
food, and perhaps a servant of their
own to provide it for them?'
Sir,' says I, 'the man who has
nothing to hope, loses the use of one
of his faculties; and, if I guess
right, and you live ten years longer,
you shall see this state as much altered
as the difference has been between
a lark and a tree he feeds on. You
shall all be possess'd of that which
will bring you fruits from the woods
without a lark to fetch it. Those
who were before your slaves, shall
then take it as an honour to be em-
ployed by you, and at the same time
shall employ others dependent on
them; so as the great and small shall
be under mutual obligations to each
other, and both to the truly industri-
ous artificer; and yet every one con-
tent only with what he merits.'
Dear Jon,' says my father, 'these
will be glorious days indeed! But,
come, come, you have played a good
part already; don't, by attempting
what you can't master, eclipse the
'glory so justly due to you.'
'No, Sir,' says I, 'nothing shall
be attempted by me to my disfavour;
for I shall ever remember my friend
Glanlizep,—Sir,' says I, 'see here,
(showing him my watch.) Why, this,'
says he, 'hung by my daughter's side
at Graundevole.' — 'It did fo,' says I;
and, pray, what did you take it
for? — A bott,' says he. 'I thought
fo,' says I; 'but as you asked no
questions, I did not then force the
knowledge of it upon you. But put
it to your ear;' he did fo. 'What
noise is that!' says he. 'Is it alive?'
— 'No,' says I, 'it is not; but it is
as significant. If I ask it what time
of the day it is, or how long I have
been going from this place to that,
look but in its face, and it tells me
prefently.'
My father looking upon it a good
while, and perceiving that the mi-
ute-hand had got farther than it was
at first, was just dropping it out of his
hand, had I not caught it. 'Why it
is alive,' says he; 'it moves!'—
Sir,' says I, 'if you had dropped it,
you had done me an inexpres'sible in-
jury.' — 'Oh ho,' says he, 'I find
now how you do your wonders; it
is something you have shut up here
that afflicts you; it is an evil spirit!'
I laughing heartily, he was sorry for
what he had said, believing he had
shewn some ignorance. 'No, Sir,'
says I, 'it is no spirit, good or evil,
but a machine made by some of my
countrymen, to measure time with.'
— 'I have heard,' says he, 'of mea-
furing an abb, or the ground, or a
rock; but never yet heard of mea-
furing time.' — 'Why, Sir,' says I,
don't you say three days hence I will
do so; or such a one is three years
old? Is not that a measuring of time
by so many days or years?' — 'Tru-
ly,' says he, 'in some sense I think
it is.' — 'Now, Sir,' says I, 'how
do you measure a day?' — 'Why, by
rising, and lying down,' says he.
'But suppose I say I will go now
and come again, and have a particu-
lar time in my head when I will re-
turn, how shall I do to make you
know that time?' — 'Why, that will
be afterwards, another time,' says he;
or I can think how long it will
be.' — 'But,' says I, 'how can you
make me know, when you think it will
be.' — 'You must think too,' says he.
'But then,' says I, 'we may de-
ceive each other, by thinking dif-
ferently. Now this will let us to
rights;' then I described the figures
to him, telling him, how many parts
they divided the day into, and that by
looking on it, I could tell how many
of such parts were pass'd; and that if
he went from me, and said he would
come one, or two, or three parts hence,
I should know when to expect him. I
then shewed him the wheels, and ex-
plained where the force lay, and why
it went no faster or slower, as well as
I could; and, from my desire of teach-
ing, insensibly perfected myself more
and more in it. So that beginning to
have a little idea of it, he wished he
had one. 'And,' says he, 'will you
teach all our people to make such
things?' — 'Then they would be dis-
regarded, Sir,' says I. 'It is im-
possible,' says he, 'I'll tell you,
Sir, how I mean,' said I. 'I can
hereafter shew you an hundred things
as useful as this; now, if every body
was to make thefe, how would other
things be made? Besides, if every
body
body made them, nobody would
want them; and then what would
any body get by them, besides the
pleasing their own fancy? But if
only twenty men make them in one
town, all the rest must come to them;
and they who make these, must go
to one of twenty others, who make
another thing that these men want,
and so on; by which means, every
man wanting something he does not
make, it will be the better for every
maker of every thing."

'Son,' says my father, 'excuse me; I am really ashamed, now you
have better informed me, I asked so
foolish a question.' I told him, we
had a faying in my country, that every
thing is easy when it is known. 'I
think,' says he, 'a man might find
every thing in your country.'

Two days after, my wife and daughter
Sally came very early; but sure no joy
could be greater than ours at sight of
each other. I embraced them both over
and over, as did my father, especially
Sally, who was a charming child.
They told me, I might expect every
thing that evening, for they left them
alighting at the height of Bat-
tringdigg; for though they came out
the last, yet the body of the people
with their baggage could not come so
fast as they did. And little Sally said,

'We sliad and rested ourselves, pure-
lv, daddy, at Battringdigg, before
the crowd came; but as soon as mam-
my had seen all my brothers safe,
who came before the rest; and kissed
Dicky, we set out again.'

About seven hours after, arrived
the second convoy from abroad, that
ever entered that country. I had too
much to do with my wife and children
that night, to spare a thought to my
cargo; so I only set a guard over them:
for though I had now been
married about sixteen years, You-
waukee was ever new to me.

I was now obliged to the king again,
for some additional conveniences to
my former apartment; and the young
ones were mightily pleased to have so
much more room than we had at home,
and to see the fiveeoes; but finding
themselves waited upon in so elegant a
manner, and by so many servants (for
with our new rooms, we had all the ser-
vants belonging to them) they thought
themselves in a paradise to the grotto,
where all we wanted we were forced
to help ourselves to.

The next day Tommy came to see
us, the king having given him a very
pretty post, since the death of Yac-
combouie; and Hallycarnie, with the
Princess Jahamel her mistres, who
was mightily pleased to see Youwaurke
in her English dres, and invited her
and the children to her apartment.

It was but a few months since my
wife saw the children; yet she scarce
knew them, they were so altered; for
the two courtiers behaved with so much
politeness, that their brothers and Sally
looked but with an ill eye upon them,
finding all the fault, and drooping as
many little invivious expressions on
them as possible. But I sharply re-
buked them: we were all made chiefly,
I told them, to please our Maker, and
that could be done only by the good-
ness of the heart; and if their hearts
were more pure, they were the best
children; but if they liked their bro-
thers and filters outward behavior
better than their own, they might fo
far imitate them.

When we were settled in our new
apartment, I unpacked my chairs and
tables, and set out my side-board, and
made such a figure as had never be-
fore been seen in that part of the world.
I wanted now some shoes for Pedro,
his own being almost past wear, for the
young ones never had worn any, but
could find none; till applying to Laff-
meel, and viewing him what I wanted,
he pointed to one of the great water-
casks; but as there were eleven of
them, big and little, I knew not where
to begin; till, having invited the king
and several of the ministers to dine
with me, I was forced to look over my
goods for several other things I should
want.

In my search, I found half a ream
of paper, a leather ink-bottle, but no
ink in it, some quills, and books of
accounts, and several other things re-
lative to writing. The prize gave me
courage to attempt the other casks; but
I found little more that I immediately
wanted. In the last cask were several
books, two of them romances, six vo-
lumes of English plays, two of devo-
tion, the next were either Spanish or
Portuguese, and the last looked like a
bible; but just opening it, and taking
it to be of the same language, I put
them
them all in again, thinking to divert myself with them some other time. I here found some more paper, and so many shoes, as when I had followed them, served me as long as I baid in the country.

Having, as I said before, invited the king to eat with me, I was sorry I had not ordered my fowls to be brought; and Youwarkee said, he thought to have done it, but I had not wrote for them. I told her, I would send Maleck for some of them; I was resolved; for I should pique myself upon giving the king a dish he had never before tasted. So I called Maleck, telling him, he must take thirty men with him to Graundevelot; "And carry six empty chests with you," says I; "and put eight of my fowls in each chest, and bring them with all expedition."—"Where do they lie, Sir?" says he.

"You will find them at roof;" says I, "when it is dark."—"I never was there," says he, "and don't know the way."—"What," says I, "never at Graundevelot?"—"Yes," says he, "but not at roof." I laughed, saying, "Maleck, did not you see fowls when you was there?" He said, he did not know, what were they like. "They are a bird," says I. "And what sort of a thing is that," says he.

"Now we hearing us in the debate, Maleck," says he, "did not you see some tos down little nuts to something that you feared at; you saw them eat the nuts."—"Oh, dear," says he, "I know it very well, with two legs and no arms."—"The same," says I, "Maleck; do you go look for a little house almost by my groto, and at night you will find these things stand on ficks in that house. Take them down gently, and come away with them in the chests." Maleck performed his business to a hair, but instead of forty-eight, brought me sixty, telling me, he found the chests would hold them very well; and I kept them afterwards in the king's garden.

CHAP. XVIII.

Peter goes to his father's—traverses the Black Mountains—takes a flight to Mount Auke—gains the miners—overcomes the government.

No farther project being ripe for execution, I took a journey home with my father to Arndrumnstake, and he would take all the children with him. Youwarkee and I stayed about six weeks, leaving all the children with my father.

Upon my return, I frequently talked with Maleck about his country; who they originally were, and how long it had been inhabited, and what other countries bordered thereon, and how they lay. He told me, his countrymen looked upon themselves to be very ancient, but they were not very numerous; for the old flock was almost worn out by the hardships they had undergone; that about three-hundred years before, he said, as he had it from good report, there were a people from beyond the sea, or as they called themselves from the little lands, had strangely over-ran them; and he had heard say, they would have over-run this country too, but they thought it would not answer. He said, when those people first came, they began to turn up the earth to a prodigious depth; "And now," says he, bringing some soft hard earth of several forts, "they put it into great fires till it runs about like water, and then beat it about with great heavy things into several shapes; and some of it, Sir," says he, "looks just like that fluff that lay at the bottom of your ship, and some almost white, and some red; for when I was a boy I was to have been sent to work amongst them, as my father did; but it having killed him, I came either, as many more have done, to avoid it."—"And what do they do with it," says I, "when they have beat it about, as you say?"—"Then," says he, "they carry it a long way to the sea."—"What then?" says I.

"Why then the little landers take it, and swim over the sea with it."—"And what do they do with it?" says I.

"Why," says he, "there are other people who take it from them, and..."
go away with it,'— 'Why do they let them take it?' says I. 'Because,' says he, 'they give them cloaths for it.'— 'Do they want cloaths,' says I, 'more than you?' He told me they had no groundee. 'And what other countries have you here about?'— 'There is one country,' says he, 'north of Alkoe, where they say there is just such another people as the Little-landers, and they get some of the things from Mount Alkoe.'— 'What do they do with them?' says I. 'I don't know,' says he; 'they fetch a great deal; but they won't let any body come into their country.'— 'Is there nobody inhabits between the Mountain Alkoe and the sea?' He told me no, the Little-landers would not let them.

Having got what information I could from Maleck, and also from a countryman or two of his he had brought to me, I considered it all over; 'And,' thinks I, 'if I could but get Mount Alkoe to submit,' (for they had told me they were only governed by a deputy from the Little-lands) 'to see the work done, I might, by intercepting the trade to the sea, turn the profit of the country my own way, and make it pass through our hands.'

I next enquired of those who brought the fruits from the great forest, what sort of land they had there; and found, by their description, it was a light mould, and in many places well covered with grass and herbs; and, by all the report I could hear, must be a fruitful country, well managed; and being a flat country, and not encompassed on that side with the black mountain, was much higher than Doorno Swan-geant. This news put me upon searching the truth of it; and I made the tour of the black mountain and the great forest, alighting often to make my observations. The forest is a little world of wood without end, with here and there a fine lawn very grassy; and indeed the wood-grounds bear it very well, the trees not standing in crowds, but at a healthy distance from each other. I went abundantly farther than any one had before been, but saw no variation in the woody scene; and coming round westward home, I had a view of heximo, which is nothing but a narrow cleft in the earth, on the top of the black mountain, of a most extraordinary depth; for, upon dropping a stone down, you shall hear it strike and hum for a long time before all is quiet again; and laying my ear over the cleft, whilst I ordered one of my attendants to throw a large stone down, after the usual thumps and humming, I imagined I heard it dash in water, so that it is not impossible it may reach to the sea; which is at least fix or seven miles below it. Into this hole all dead bodies are precipitated, from the king to the beggar; for four gullumns, holding by the ankles and wrists of the deceased, fly with them to heximo, and throw them down, whilst the air is filled with the lamentations of the relations of the deceased, and of such others as are induced to follow the corpse for the sake of the wines, on such occasions plentifully distributed to all comers, by the gentry; and in the best proportion they are able by even the meanest amongst them.

After a stay of about fourteen days at home, I fixed my next trip for Mount Alkoe; and having told Maleck my design, he said he would go with me with all his heart, but feared I should get no Brandeguarpine to bear me; for he told me they had an old tradition, that Mindrack lived there, and would not go for all the world; 'Which has been the greatest security that country has had, for this would have devoured them elles,' says he.

I spoke to the king, to Nafig, and the ragans; and found them all unanimous, that the mountain Alkoe was the habitation of Mindrack, and that the noises which had been heard there, were his servants beating bad men. Says I to myself, 'Here is one of the ufefullest projects upon earth spoiled, by an unaccountable prepossession; what must be done to overcome this prejudice?'

I told Maleck I found what he said to be too true, as to the people of Brandeguar; 'But,' says I, 'are there not enough of your country-men here to carry me thither?' He believing there were, I ordered him to contract with them; but it vexed me very much to be obliged to take these men. However, though I resolved to go, yet I chose to reason the ragans into the project, if I could; thinking they would soon bring the people over.

I called
I called several of the ragans together, and said: 'Because you are a wiser and more thinking people than the vulgar, I have applied myself to your judgments in the affair of Mount Alko. Now, consider with yourselves, whether you have any real reason beyond a prepossession, for thinking these people fiends or devils servants, as you call them, without farther examination; for, according to my comprehension, they only understand the nature of several forts of earth, reduce them by labour and fire to solid substances for the use of mankind; and the want of these things is the reason of your living as you do, without an hundredth part of the benefits of life. These forts of people, these noises, and these operations, which you hear and fee carried on at Alko, are to be heard and seen in my country; and we deal and traffick with their labours, from one end of the world to the other; and we who are with them the happiest, without them should be the most miserable of people. Did not some of you see, at my entertainment, what I called my knives and forks, and spoons, my pistols, cutlasses, and silver cup? All these, and infinitely more, are the produce of these poor men's industry. Now," says I, "if we settle a communication with these people, your dues will be all paid in these curious things; you will have your people employed in working them, and have strangers applying to you to serve them with what they want; who, in return, will give you what you want; and you will find yourselves known and respected in the world.' Finding some of these arguments, applied to the men, had staggered them a little, I applied to their fences. Says I, 'It still appears to me that you have your prejudices hanging on you; but what will you say if I go thither and return safe; will you be afraid to follow me another time?' They persuaded me from it, as a dangerous experiment; but said, if I did return, they would not think there was so much in it as they suspected.

Maleck having chosen me out fourscore of his countrymen, in about a month's time I trained them up to the knowledge of my pistols and cutlasses, and the management of them; and taking a chest with me for the arms and other necessaries, we sailed up to the black mountain. I refled there; and there Naigig and Lasmeel overtook me; saying, that when they found me obstinate to go, they could not in their hearts leave me, happen what would. This put new spirits into me, and we consulted how the noises lay, and agreed to engage first upon the skirts of them, where the smokes were most fragging. I charged six guns, and all my pistols, which I kept in my chest, and ordered them to alight with me about an hundred paces from the first smoke they saw; then ordered three of them to carry my guns after me, and twelve of them to take pistols and follow me; but not to fire till I gave orders. The remainder I left with the baggage.

We marched up to the smoke, which issued out of a low arch-way just at the foot of the mountain. It was very light there with the flames of the volcano; and, entering the arch, a fellow ran at me with a red-hot iron-bar, him I shot dead; and seeing two more and a woman there, who stood with their faces to the wall of the hut or room, as unwilling to be seen, I ordered Maleck to speak to them in a known tongue, and tell them we were no enemies, nor intended them any hurt; and that their companion's fate was owing to his own rashness in running first at me with the hot bar; and that if they would shew themselves good-natured and civil to us, we would be so to them; but if they offered to resist openly, or use any manner of treachery towards us, they might depend upon the fame fate their companion had just suffered.

Upon hearing this, they approached us; and shewing great tokens of submission, I delivered my gun to Maleck, and bade them go on with their work, ordering all the guns out of the shop, for fear of a spark. I then perceived they were direct forges, but made after another manner from ours, their wind being made by a great wheel, like a wheel of a water-mill, which worked with the fans or wings in a large trough, and caused a prodigious issue of air through a small hole in the back of the fire-place. They were then drawing out iron-bars. I gave
I gave each of these men, and also to the woman, a dram of brandy; which they swallowed down very greedily, and looked for more, and seemed very pleasant. I then enquired into the trade; by whom, and how it was carried on; and they told me just as Maleck had done. I then asked where the mines lay; and one of them looking full at me said, "Then you know what we are about." *Yes," says I, "very well." He told me the mine was (in his language, as Maleck interpreted it) about a quarter of a mile off, and directed me to it. I ordered them to go on with their work, telling them, though I left a guard over them, it was only that they might not raise their neighbours to disturb me; though if they did, I should serve them all as I had done their companion; and left four men with pickets at the arch-way.

I proceeded to the iron-mine, but supposing the men were all within, for I saw nobody; but there were many large heaps of ore lying, which I felt of; and, being very heavy, I supposed it might be rich in metal.

I returned to my men at the arch, and asked them what other mines there might be in that country, and of what other metals; but Maleck not knowing the metals themselves, was not able to interpret the names they called them by. I then shewed them an English halfpenny, a Portuguese piece of silver-money, and my gold watch; and asking if they had any of those, they pointed to the halfpenny and silver-piece, but shook their heads at the watch. I then shewed them a musket-ball, and they said they had a great deal of that.

I desired them to shew me the way to the copper-mine, (pointing my finger to the halfpenny) and told them if they would go with me, they should have some more, (pointing to my brandy;) and they readily agreed, if I would stand by them for leaving their work. I believe it might be two miles farther on the right to the copper-mine; and as these men had the granudee, I expected they would have flown by me; but I found they had a light chain round their granudee, which prevented them; so I walked too; and having made them my friends by being familiar with them, I desired they would go in, and let the head-man of the works know that a stranger desired to speak with him, and view his works, and to inform him how peaceable I was; if he used me civilly; but that I could strike him dead at once if he did not.

I do not know how they managed, or what report they made; but the man came to me very courteously, and I bade Maleck ask if he came in friendship, as I did to him; and he giving me that assurance, I went in with him, taking Nafigig and Maleck with me, and leaving our fire-arms without. I ordered them both, as I did myself, to carry their cutlasses, sheathed in their hands, for fear of a surprize. We saw a great quantity of copper-ore, and several melting-vats, being just at the mouth of the mine, the mine running horizontally into the side of the mountain, and, as they said, was very rich. I gave the head-man a little brandy, and two or three more of them, who had been industrious in shewing and explaining things to me.

I desired the foreman to walk out with me; and, asking how long he had been in that employ, he told me he was a native of the Born Isles, and was brought thither young, where he first wrought in the iron, then in the silver, and now in this mine: that he had been there twenty years, and never expected to be delivered from his miserable slavery; but as he was now over-fier of that work, he did pretty well, though nothing like freedom. He told me they expected several new frames quickly; for the mines killed those they did not agree with so fast, they were very thinly wrought at present, and that the governor was gone to the Isles to get more men. I was glad to hear this: *And, pray," says I, "where does the governor reside?" He (pointing to the place) told me. "And what guard," says I, "may he keep?"—*

*About four hundred men; but nobody durs molest him," says he; for he tortures them in such a manner, never killing them, that not the least thing can be done against him with will.*

After we had talked a good while on the misery of slavery, and finding him a man fit for my purpose, I asked him if he would go with me to Brandeguar; "For," said I, "there are certainly good mines in those mountains;"
tains; and if you will overlook them, you shall be free, and have whatever you desire.' He shook his head, saying, how could he expect to be free where all the rest were slaves; 'And, besides,' says he, they are in such commotions among themselves, that it is said the state will be torn to pieces.'—'You are mistaken,' says I, 'very much; I myself have settled peace amongst them, and killed the usurper.'—'Is it possible!' says he; and are you the man it was said they expected to come out of the sea?'—The very same,' says I: 'and as to slavery, there is not a slave in the kingdom; nor shall be here, if you will hearken to me.'—That would be a good time indeed,' says he. Well,' says I, 'my friend, I promise you it shall be so; only observe this, that when I come to reduce the governor, do none of you miners assist him.' He promised he would let the other miners secretly know it, and all should be as I wished; but desired me to be expeditious, for the governor was expected every day.

I went from him to the other mines, and my guides with me; who seeing me so well received at the copper-mine, and reporting it to the others, it caused my proceedings to go on smoothly, and my offers to be readily embraced wherever I came.

Having prepared matters thus, I set Maleck and his countrymen upon the natives, to treat with them about submission to Georgiotti, on promise of freedom; who being assured of what I had done at Brandleguard, and in hopes of like liberty, readily came into it; so that the only thing remaining was, before the governor's return, to attack the soldiers. Having, therefore, renewed my engagements with the miners, and believing myself upon as good terms with the natives as I could wish; I was advised by Nafig and Lafineel to return for cannon and a large army, before I attacked the soldiers; but I, who had all my life rode upon the four, having considered that an opportunity once lost is never to be regained, and though I could have wished for some cannon, I valued the men but for the new. I therefore formed my resolves to march with the force I had next morning, and pitch upon a plain just by the governor's garrison, in order, if I could, to draw his men out. I did so, and it answeredit; for, upon the first news of my coming, they appeared with a fort of heavy-headed weapons, which hurling round, they threw upwards aloft, in order to light upon the backs of their enemies in flight, and beat them down; but they could not throw them above thirty paces.

I sat still in my chair, with a gun in my hand, and Maleck with another at my elbow, with four more lying by me, ready to be presented; Lafineel standing by to charge again as fast as we fired. I ordered a party of twenty of my men, with cutlases, to attack the van of the enemy, by rushing impetuously upon them, they coming but thin against me; for I was not willing to employ my pieces till I could do more execution. They began the attack about an hundred yards before me, not very high in the air; and my cutlases-men having avoided the first flight of their weapons, fell upon them with such fury, that chopping here and there, and a grandee, which disabling their flight, was equally pernicious, they fell by scores before me: but I seeing those in the rear, which made a body of near three hundred, coming very swift and close in treble ranks, one above the other, hoping to bear down my handful of men with their numbers, I ordered my men all to retire behind me, and not, till the enemy were passed over my head, to fall on them. Maleck and I, as they came near, each firing a piece together, and whipping up another, and then another, in an instant, they fell round us, roaring and making a horrid yell. This the rest seeing, went over our men's heads, not without many falling from the cuts of my men; and those who escaped were never heard of more.

The miners, who from their several stations had beheld the action, came singing and dancing, from every quarter, round me; and if I had not drawn my men close in a circle about me, would probably, out of affection, have done me more hurt than two of the governor's armies; for against these common gratitude denied the use of force; and they crowding every one but to touch me, they said, for fear of being pressed to death myself, as
fetched him down with a musket-shot, bidding Maleck tell the rest, that if they submitted and laid down their weapons, they were safe; but if they refused, I would serve them all as I had done him who fled. This speech, with the terror of the gun, fixed every man to his place like a statue.

I then went forward to the governor, and by Maleck, my interpreter, asked him who they all were with him; he told me his flaves. I then made him call every man before him, and give him freedom; which, finding no way to avoid, (for I looked very stern) he did, and I had enough to do to quiet my new freemen, who, I thought, would have devoured me for joy. I asked whether he was going; he said, to his government. 'Under whom do you hold it?' says I. 'Under the zaps of the ides,' says he. I then told him, that whoever held that government for the future, must receive it from the hands of Georgetti, the king of that country, to whom all the natives and miners had already engaged their fidelity. I told him both natives and foreigners had been all declared free.

The governor seemed much dejected, and told me he hoped I would not use him or his company ill. I told him that depended entirely on his own and their good behaviour. I asked who his friends were that were with him; he said, they were some of the zaps-relations, who were come to see the method of the government, and inspect the mines.

Ordering all the governor's guards and friends to go before, and all my own, but Maleck, to keep backwards some paces, I entered into discourse with him about the state of the ides, and the country of Alkoe; and finding him a judicious person, and not a native of the ides, I thought, with some management, he might prove a useful person to me, but did not like the character I had heard of his severity; so I plainly told him, that only one thing prevented my making him a greater man than ever he was; which was, I had been informed he had a roughness in his nature which drove him to extremities with the poor slaves, which I could not bear. 'Sir,' says he, whatever a man is in his natural temper, where slavery abounds it is necessary.
necessary to act, or at least be thought to do so, in a mercifull manner. I am intrusted with the government of a land of only slaves; who have no more love, nor are they capable of any, for me, than the herbs of the ground have. I am to render an account to my masters of their labours; they work by force, and would not stir a step without it, or the fear of correction; for which reason the rod must be ever held over them; and though I seldom let it fall, when I do, the suffering of one is too long remembered to permit others quickly to subject themselves to the like punishment: and this method I judged to be the most mild, as the death or sufferings of one but seldom, must, though ever so severe, be milder than the frequent execution of numbers. And as to my appearing severe to them, my post required it; for mercy to slaves being interpreted into fear, arms them with violence against you.

I could not gainsay this, especially as he told me he was glad I had freed them all; 'For no man,' says he, 'but if he were to chuse, would rather reign by love (which he may in a free country, but it is impractica-ble in one of slaves) than by fear, which alone will keep the latter in subjection.'

I asked him whether, as he knew the nature of the country, and the business of the governor, he could become faith-ful to my master Georgisetti: he told me he had ever been faithful to his masters the zaps, and would till he was sure (without suspecting in the least my veracity) all was true that I was pleased to tell him; for nothing could satisfy his confidence but being an eye-witness of it; and then being discharg-ed from any farther capacity of serv-ing them in an open way, he should be free to chuse his own matter; of all whom, Georgisetti would to him be most preferable; but begged me not to interpret his desire of retaining fidelity to his old masters till he could no longer serve them, into an implication of afflicting them, by either open or concealed practices; for, wherever he engaged, he would be true to the utmost.

At the end of six days (for I travelled on foot with them) we arrived at the governor's palace, which we found without a guard, and all the slaves he had sent before him at liberty: so I ordered my men to supply the usual guard, and took my lodging in the governor's apartment.

As Gaddi (for that was the governor's name) was not confined, or any of his friends, he came into my apartment, and told me, since he had found all things answered my report, if I pleased, he would quit the palace to me, and every thing belonging to the government. I told him he said well. He did so, taking with him only some few things, his own property. Soon as he was without the territory of the palace, I sent for him and his friends back again: he could not help being dejected at his return, fearing some mischief. 'Gaddi,' says I, 'this palace and this country, which I now hold for my master Georgisetti, I deliver in custody to you as his govern-er; and now charge you to make acknowledgment of your fidelity to him.' Then taking it from him in terms of my own propoing, I delivered him the regalia of his govern-ment, charging him to maintain freed-dom: 'But,' says I, 'let no man eat who will not work, as the country and the produce are the king's.'

I then summoned an assembly of the people, and sent notice to all the miners to attend me. I told them, all that the king desired of them was to make themselves happy; 'And as the mines at present, says I, 'are the only employment of this country, I would have it agreed by your own consent; for I will force nothing upon you, that every man amongst you, from sixteen to sixty, shall work every third week at the mines, and other duties of the government; and two weeks out of three shall be your own to provide in for your families: and if I live to come back again, you shall each man have so much land of his own, as shall be sufficient for his family; and I will make it my business to see for fees to im-prove it with. And this week's work in three, and if afterwards it can be done with less, in four, shall be an acknowledgment to the king for his bounty to you. Do you agree to this?' They all, with one voice, cried out, 'We do!' 'Then,' says I, 'agree.
agree amongst yourselves, and part
into proper divisions for carrying on
the work; that is, into four parts,
one for each sort of metal; and then
again, each of those four into three
parts; and on every seventh day in
the morning, let those who are to be-
gin meet those who are leaving off
work; so that there be clear fix days
work, and one of going and return-
ing. Do you all agree to this? All
cried, 'We do!'—'Then,' says I,
whoever neglects his duty, unless
through sickness, or by leave of
the governor, shall work a double
week. Do you agree to this?—
'Were do!'—'Then all matters of dif-
ference between you shall be decided
by the governor; and in case of any
injury or injustice, or wrong judg-
ment in the governor, by Georiget-
ti. Do you agree?—'We do!'—
'Then,' says I, 'agree upon ten
men, two for the natives, and two
for each mineral work, to fend with
me to Brandeguarpe, to petition Ge-
origetti to confirm these laws, till
you shall make others yourselves,
and to acknowledge his sovereignty.
Do you agree?—'We do!'—
I then told them, that as those who
had been slaves were now free, they
might, if they pleased, return home;
but, as I should make it my endeavour
to provide so well for them in all the
comforts of life, I believed most of
them would be of opinion, their in-
terest would keep them where they were.
And, above all things, recommending
a hearty union between the new free-
men and the natives; and to marry a-
mongst each other, and to continue in
love amongst themselves, and duty to
the king and his governor; and pro-
ming speedily to return and settle
what was wanting, I dismissed the af-
sembly, and set out for Brandeguarpe
with the ten deputies: but I left La-
meal behind with the governor, and
two servants with him, to give me im-
mediate notice in case any disturbance
should happen in my absence.

C H A P. X X I X .

PETER ARRIVES WITH THE DE-
PUTIES—PRESENTS THEM TO
THE KING—THEY RETURN—A
COLONY DECREED TO BE SENT

THITHER—NASIO MADE GO-
VERNOR—MANNER OF CHUSING
THE COLONY—A FLIGHT-RACE,
AND THE INTENT OF IT—WAL-
SI WINS THE PRIZE, AND IS
FOUND TO BE A GAWREX.

A S we alighted at the palace late at
night, I kept the deputies with me till next morning; when I went to
the king, desiring them to stay in my
apartment till I had received his maje-
sy's orders for their admission.
The king was but just up when I
came in; and seeing me, embraced me,
saying, 'Dear father, I am glad to
meet you again alive; your stay has
given me the utmost perplexity; and
could I have prevailed with any of
my servants to have followed you, I
had sent before this time to have
known what was become of you.'
I told his majesty, the greatest plea-
sure of my life consisted in the know-
ledge of his majesty's esteem for me;
and he might depend upon it, I would
take care of myself from a double mo-
tive, whilst I was in his dominions;
the one, from the natural obligation of
my own preservation; and the other,
equally compulsive, of continuing ser-
vicable to his majesty, till I had made
him more famous than his ancestor,
the great Bogsurbeck.
'I told his majesty, as a small token
of my duty and affection to him, I was
come to make him a tender of the ad-
ditional title of King of Mount Al-
koe. 'Father,' says he, 'we shall
never be able to get a sufficient num-
ber of my subjects to go thither;
for though your safe return may be
some encouragement, yet, whilst
their old apprehensions subsist, (and
I know not what will alter them) we
can do no good: and, indeed, were
they free to go, and under no suspi-
cion of danger, it would cost abun-
dance of men to conquer Mount
Alkoe,'—

Great Sir,' said I, 'you mistake
me. I told you I came to make you
a tender of it; I have proclaimed
you king there, and freedom to the
people: I have held an assembly of
the kingdom; placed a governor;
taken the engagement of himself and
subjects to you; settled laws amongst
them for your benefit; the full third
part of all their labour, have brought

* ten.
PETER WILKINS.

The colonists, who, for want of practice this way, knew but little of the matter, thinking, nevertheless, that in the general turn of things, they must somehow come in for a share, approved of all I said. I designed them then to settle, out of what part of the people, and how to be nominated, such choice of the colony as should be made for the new settlement; but found them much at a loss to fix on any method of doing it. So I told them, I believed it would be the best way to issue an order for such as would willingly go, to repair to a particular rendezvous; and in case sufficient should not appear voluntarily, to issue another order, that the colonists, out of their several districts, should compleat the number, so as to make a body of twelve thousand men of arms, besides women and children; and that such a territory should be allotted to each, with so much wood-grounds, in common to all, as would suffice for their subsistence: all which passed the vote.

I then told them, that this large people must have an head, or governor, to keep them to their duties, and to determine matters of property, and all disputes amongst them. Here they one and all nominated me; but I told them, I apprehended I could be more useful other ways, having too many things in my head for the general good, to confine myself to any particular province; but if they would exclude me in presuming to recommend a person, it should be Naigig. And immediately Naigig being sent for, and accepting it, they conferred it upon him.

All things, as I judged, went on in so smooth a way, in reference to the new colony, that I was preparing, with the assistance of the proper officer, express in to be sent with the king’s grip-packs, into the several provinces, with notice of these orders, and an appointment for a rendezvous. But while this was doing, abundance of people came crouding about me, to be informed, whether I thought it safe for them to go; and I believe I had fully satisfied all their scruples, when by some management of the ragans, who, having so long declared Mount Alkoe to be inhabited by Mindrack, did not care the people should all of a sudden find out they had deceived them, there was a report ran current, that though I and my bearers, who were all Mount Alkoe men, returned safe, yet if any of the
the Brandleguarpines had gone, they would never have come back again. This rumour coming to my ears, and fearing whither it might grow, I had no small prospect of a disappointment; and I thereupon stopped filling the orders till I had considered what farther to do in the affair: at length, being persuaded I had already satisfied abundance of their scruples, and in order to dissipate the doubts of others, and to familiarize them in some measure to the country and people of Mount Alkoe, I proposed a prize to be flown for, and gave notice of it for six days all about the country, both to those of Mount Alkoe, and those of Safs Doorpt Swangeants; that whoever, except those who were with me in the late expedition, should make the most speedy flight to the governor's of Mount Alkoe, to carry a message, and bring me an answer from Laismeel, should have one of my pistols, with a quantity of powder, and so many balls; and the person who should be second, should have a cutlass and belt. The time being fixed, very few had entered in the first two or three days; but on the third day came several over from Alkoe to enter, which the Brandleguarpines seeing, and having equal inclination to the prize, after half a dozen of them had entered on the fourth morning, before noon on the fifth, I had near sixty of them on my lift, besides the Alkoe men; making in all about one hundred.

The time of starting was fixed for the sixth morning, from off the rock, on the back side of the palace, upon my firing a pistol.

This unusual diversion occasioned a prodigious confluence of spectators; for scarce a person in Brandleguarp, except those who were either too young or too old for flight, but were upon one or other of the rocks: even the king himself and all his court were there, with infinite numbers from all distant parts.

I had dispatched a letter, by one of my old bearers, to Laismeel some days before, to inform him of it, that he might get two letters ready wrote, one to deliver to the first, and another to the second messenger; but not to take farther notice of the rest: now, my flight-race being for the equal benefit of both the kingdoms, it happened, as

I was in hopes it would, that so many of the Mount Alkoans coming over to me to be entered, and staying with me till the flight began; and such vast numbers of persons meeting of both nations upon the black mountains, to see them go and return; and several of the Swangeantines going out of bravado, quite through with the flyers; the intercourse of the two nations was that day so great, and the discourse they had with the natives and miners, so stripped the Swangeantines of their old apprehensions of danger from Mount Alkoe, that in three days after the whole dread of the place was vanished, and he would then have been thought mad who had attempted to revive it.

The time being come, I set my flyers in a row on the outer edge of the rock; and having given notice that no one should presume to rise till the flyers were on the grandee, and at such a distance, I then let the flyers know I should soon give fire; which I had no sooner done but down they all dropped as one man, as it were, headlong from the edge of the mountain; and presently the whole field were after them. They skimmed with incredible swiftness cross the face of the plain, between the rock and the mountain; the force of which deflect swung them as it were up the mountain's side in an almost upright posture; till seeming to sweep the edge of the mountain with their bellies, they slid over it's surface, till they were lost in the body of the Swangean, our rocks echoing the shouts of the mountaineers. I fired my pistol, by my watch, at nine o'clock in the morning, but had no occasion to enquire when it was thought they would return, for every one was pallng his opinion upon it. Some said, it could not be till midnight, or very near it; and others, that it would be almost next morning. However, we went to dinner, and coming again about six o'clock by my watch, I was told by the people on the rock, as the general opinion, (for it was then top-full) that they could not yet be expected a long time; and the major part concluded they could not be half way home yet: when, on a sudden, we heard a prodigious shout from the mountain, which growing nearer and nearer to us, and louder and louder.
in a few moments came a slim young fellow, and nimbly alighting on the rock, tripped briskly forward, as not able to stop himself at once, from the violence of the force he came with, and delivered me a letter from Lasmeeel as I was sitting in my chair. I gave him joy of the prize, and ordered him to come to my apartment so soon as I got home, and he should have it. I then asked him where he left the other flyers: he told me, he knew nothing of them since he came past the forges in his return; for there he met them going to Lasmeeel. 'Why that,' says I, 'must be a great way on this side the governors.' He told me, about half an hour's flight. I then told him, as he must be trained with so hard a flight, it would be better if he laid down, and called on me in the morning. He thanked me; and after he had told me his name was Walli, he said he would take my advice; and, springing up as light as air, went off, the rock being quite thronged with those who had followed from the mountain to see the victor.

When Walli came in, it was just seven o'clock by my watch; so that, according to the best computation by miles I could make from their descriptions of things, I judged he had flown at little more or less than at the rate of a mile a minute.

I stayed till near nine o'clock upon the rock, where it being cold, and the time tedious, I was taking Quilly home with me, and designed that Maleck should wait for the coming of the second; but hearing again a shout from the mountain, I resolved to see the second come in myself. The noise increasing, I presently saw the whole air full of people, very near me, for I had retired near two hundred paces from the edge of the rock to give room to the flyers to alight, and expected nothing less than to be borne down by them; when I spied two competitors, one just over the back of the other, the uppermost bearing down upon the other's grandee, their heads being just equal; so that the under man perceiving it impossible to sink lower for the rock; or to mount higher, for the man above him, and as darting sideways would lose time, and fearing to bruise his belly against the rock, he slackened, just to job up his head in his antagonist's stomach; which giving the upper man a smart check with the pain, and the under-one striking, at that instant, one hold stroke with his grandee, he fell just with his head at my feet, and the other upon him, with his head in the under man's neck.

Thus they lay, for a considerable time, breathless and motionless, save the working of their lungs, and heaving of their breasts; when each asked me if he was not the first, and the under man giving me a letter; I told them, 'No,' Walli had been in almost two hours ago. They both said, it was impossible; they were sure no glummer in the Doort could out-fly either of them. I ordered them both to call on me in the morning, and I would see they should have right done to their pretentions. The under man had but just told me his name was Naggitt, when another arrived, who, seeing Nag-gitt before him, told me he was sure he was second; but on seeing the other also, he gave it up.

I would stay no longer, it being now so late; but the next morning I was informed, that all the rest had flapped at the mountain but two, who were obliged to give out before, being overstrained, and unable to hold it.

The next morning, Walli was the first at my apartment, when I happened to be with the king; and, speaking of his business to Quilly, he ordered him to stay in my gallery till I came back; and Quilly presently after seeing Youwarkee, told her the victor at the flight-race was waiting for me in the gallery. Youwarkee, who had great curiosity to see him, having heard how long he came in before the rest, stepped into the gallery, and taking a turn or two there, fell into discourse with him about his flight. And, as women are very inquisitive, she distinguished, by the flyer's answers, speech, shape, and manner of address, that it was certainly a glummer he was talking with; though she had endeavoured to disguise herself, by rolling in her hair, and tying it round her head with a broad chaplet, like a man; and by the thinness of her body, and flatness of her breasts, might fairly enough have paifed for one, to a less penetrating eye than Youwarkee's. But Youwarkee putting some questions to her, and saying she was more like a glummer than
than a glumm, she put the poor girl (for so it was) to the blush, and at last she confessed the deceit; but, upon her knees, begged Youwarkee not to mention it, for it would be her undoing.

This confession gave Youwarkee a fair opportunity of asking how she came to be an adventurer for this fort of prize. The girl, finding there was no remedy, frankly confessed, she had a strong affection for a glumm-bos, who was a very stout glumm, she said, but somewhat too corpulent for speedy flight; who ever since the prize had been proposed, could reit neither night nor day, to think he was not so well qualified to put in for it as others; especially one Naggit, who he well knew made his addresses to her, and also was an adventurer. 'Had it been a matter of strength, valour, or manhood,' says he, 'I had had the bulk of chances for it; but to be under a natural incapacity of obtaining so glorious a prize, as even the king himself is not master of such another, I cannot bear it!' She then said, he had told her, he was resolved to give in his name, and do his utmost, though he died in the flight.

'What!' said he, 'shall I see Naggit run away with it, and, perhaps, with you too, when he has that to lay at your feet which no glumm else can boast of? No, I'll overcome, or never come home without it.'—

'1 must confess, Madam,' says Walfi, as I knew his high spirit could never bear to be vanquished, I was afraid he would be as good as his word, and come to some unlucky end; and told him, that though he need not have feared being conqueror in any thing else, had it been proposed, yet in flight, there were so many, half glums as they were, who from their effeminate make and size, and little value for any thing else, would certainly be in before him; that it was unworthy of a thorough glumm to contend with them, for what could be obtained only by those who had no right to, or share in any thing more excellent; and that he must therefore not think of more than his fatigue for his pains. But as he had set his heart so much upon it, I would enter, and try to get it for him; as, from my size and make,
fair of love, her gentle heart could have dwelt all day upon the repetition of any circumstances which would create delight in the enamoured. Youwarkee and Walfi fat on thorns, wanting to be gone; but Youwarkee asking question upon question, Walfi got up, and begged she would excuse her, she would come and stay at any other time. 'But,' says she, 'Madam, if the man one loves is in pain, (for I am sure he is on the rack for fear of a discovery, till he sees me) if you ever loved yourself, you cannot blame me for preffing to relieve him.'

When she was gone, Youwarkee, finding me alone, was as full of Walfi's adventure she could not be silent; but after twenty round-about speeches, and promises that I was to make, not to be angry with any body, or undo any thing I had done that day, and I know not what, out came the story. I was prodigiously pleased with it, and wished I had taken more notice of her. Says Youwarkee, 'I endeavoured to keep her till you had done, that you might have seen her.'—'And why did not you?' says I. 'My dear,' says Youwarkee, 'had you seen the poor creature's uneafiness till she got off with it, yourself could not have had the heart to defer it. Pleasure you would have perceived the expected when he came home; nor could you in conscience have detained her.'

CHAP. XX.


This race, notwithstanding all that the ragans could say to keep up their credit, and to prevent the people's perceiving what fools they had made of them, had so good and sudden an effect on the people's prejudices, that upon issuing the first proclamation, there was no occasion for the second; for at least twenty-five thousand men appeared voluntarily at the rendezvous, of the old slaves, whose masters, though they were declared free, had used divers devices to oppress them, and render even their freedom a sort of slavery, besides women and children: so that we had now only to pick and choose those who would be likeliest to be of service to the new colony.

Nafigig and I differed now about the choice of persons; he, as a soldier, was for taking molly fingle young men, and I for taking whole families, though some were either too old or too young for war; and, upon farther consideration, he agreed with me; for I told him, young men would leave a father, mother, or mistress, behind them, which would either cause a hankering after home, and consequently the bad example of desertion, or else create an uneasy spirit, and perhaps a general dissatifice to the settlement, so we chose those whole families, where they offered, which had the most young men in them, first; then others, in like order; after that, man by man, asking them severally, if any woman they liked would go with them; and if so, we took her, till we had about thirteen thousand fighting men, besides old men, women, and children; and then, marching by the palace, the king ordered ten days stores for every mouth, and with this we took our flight: but as I was always fearful of a concourse in the air, Nafigig led them, and I brought up the rear.

Besides the above number of people, I believe we could not have left less than ten thousand volunteers to the black mountain; some to take leave of their friends, and others out of curiosity to see our flight. I took three pieces of cannon with me, and proper stores.

Our first stage, after a short halt on the black mountain, was to the governor's palace; where Gaddi received us with great respect. I told him my errand, which he approved; 'For,' says he, 'countryman, it is now as much my interest to keep my old matters out, as ever it was to serve them when in; and you have taken the only method in the world to do it effectually.' I confulted him; where
and, by his advice, fixed it on this side the wood, with some scattering habitations behind the wood, as watch-houses, to give notice of an enemy, having the wood for shelter, before they could reach the town; and, at the worst, the town for a retreat.

I found, by Gaddi, that the ships from the Little-lands were soon expected, for that, he said, the zaps knew nothing yet of the change of government, nor could, till the ships returned; he asked me, as there was now a good lading, whether I thought fit to let them have it upon proper terms. I told him, I would not hinder their having the metals, or endeavour to stop their trade in the least; but should be glad to treat with them about it myself.

I gave the forge-men descriptions for making hovels, fpades, pickaxes, hammers, and abundance of other iron implements I should want in the building the new town; all which we got ready, and carried with us. We then took flight, and alighted on the spot of our intended city; and having viewed the ground some miles each way, we drew the out-lines, and set a great number of hands to cutting down trees, digging holes, and making trenches for the foundations. In short, we were all hands at it, and the women fetched the provisions; but I was obliged to shew them every single step they were to take, towards the new erections: and, I must say, it was with great pleasure I did it, they seldom wanting to be told twice, having as quick an apprehension of what they heard or saw, as any people I had ever met with.

The whole city, according to our plan, was to consist of several long straight streets, parallel to each other, with gardens backwards each way, and traverse-passage at proper distances, to cross each street, from one to the other; quite through the whole city.

While this work was in hand, I took a progress to view the other country Maleck had told me of. We had not taken a very long flight, before we saw at a distance several persons of that country travelling to Mount Alkoe for metals. I had a great mind to have some talk with them about their kingdom, and ordered my bearers to go to them; they told me, they durst not, for one of them would kill ten men. I did not chuse to force them to it, for fear of some mischief; but observing which way they came, and that they came in several small bodies, of six or eight together, and that there was a little wood, and some bushes between me and them, I ordered my bearers to sink beneath the trees out of their sight, and to ground me just at the foot of the wood; for I resolved to know something more of them before we parted.

I lay perdue, till they arrived within sixty paces of me; then asking Maleck if he knew their language, and he telling me he did, having often conversed with them at the mines, I bid him greet them, and tell them I was a friend, and be sure to stand by me. There were seven of them, and many more at different distances. I studied myself, and Maleck spoke to them, when two or three of the hindermost ran quite away; one stood and looked very surly; but the rest, who had stood with him, turning to run, I bid Maleck tell him, if he did not call them back, I would kill them. He that stood then called to them, but they mending their pace upon it, I let fly, and shot one in the shoulder; who dropping, I was afraid I had killed him. I then went up to the other, who had not stirred even at the report of the gun; seeming quite terrified. I took him by the hand, and killed it, which made him recover himself a little, and he took mine and killed it.

I bid Maleck tell him I was a great traveller, and only wanted to talk with him; but seeing the man I had shot stirs, I went to him, and by Maleck told him I was sorry I had hurt him; which I should not have attempted, had he not flown a misfortune of me by running away, for I could not bear that; this I said to keep the other with me. I saw I had hurt his shoulder, but, being at a great distance, the ball had not entered the blade-bone, but stopping there, had fallen out; so tying my handkerchief over it, I told him I hoped it would soon be well.

I inquired into their country, it's name, the intent of their journey this way, their trades, the fruits, birds, and beasts of the country.

The man I had shot, I found, was in pain, which gave me no little concern;
When they were met, the woman and child being amongst them, he told them, that child was their king; and that his loins should produce them a race of kings for fifteen hundred years; during which time, they should be happily governed: but then a female inhabitant of the skies should claim the dominion, and, together with the kingdom, be utterly destroyed, unless a messenger from above, with a crown in each hand, should procure her a male of her own kind; and then the kingdom should remain for the like number of years to her posterity. Now, says he, the time will expire very soon, and as no one has been, or it is believed will ever come, with two such crowns, the Princefs Stygeee, though she undoubtedly will try for it, has little hopes of succeeding her father; for her cousin Felbamko pretends, as no woman ever reigned with us, he is the right heir, and will have the kingdom.'—Pray, says I, 'what do you mean by an inhabitant of the air?'—O, says he, 'the flies.'—

And do most of your country folks fly?' says I, 'for I perceive you don't.'—No, says he, 'no one but the Princefs Stygeee.'—How comes that about?' says I. 'Her mother, when she was with child with her,' says he, 'being one day in a wood near the palace, and having ftaggled from her company, was attacked by a man with a graundee, who, not knowing her, clasped her within his graundee, and would have debauched her; but perceiving her cries had brought iome of her fer-vants to her assistance, he quitted her, and went off: this accident threw her into such a fright, that it was a long time before she recovered; and then was delivered of a daughter with a graundee.'—'My friend,' says I, 'your meeting with me will be a very happy affair for your king-dom. I am the man the princefs expects; go back to the princefs and let her and her father know, I will be with them in fix days, and efta-blish his dominions in the princefs.'

The fellow looked at me, thinking I joked, but never offered to stir a foot. 'Why don't you go?' says I. 'And for the good news you bear to the princefs, I'll see you shall be made one
The man smiled still, but could not con-
ceive I was in earnest; I asked him
then how long he should be in going
to the palace; he said three days at
least; * Deliver but your message
right,* says I, * and I'll assure you
it shall be the better for you.* The
man seeing me look serious, did at
length believe me, and promised he
would obey me punctually; but he
had not seen how I came to the place
he met me at, for I had ordered my
bearers into the wood with my chair,
before I shewed myself.
He arrived, as I afterwards found,
at the palace, the fourth morning very
early; and passing the guard in a great
heat, with much ado was introduced
to the king, and discharged himself of
my message. His majesty giving no
credit to him, thought he had been
mad; but he affirming it to be true,
and telling the king at what a distance I
had knocked down his companion,
and made a great hole in his back, only
holding up a thing I had in my hand,
which made a great noise; Oniwhelske
ordered his daughter to come before
him, who having herself heard the
man's report, and being very willing
to believe it, with the king's leave,
desired that the messenger might be
detained till the appointed day, and
taken care of; and that preparation
should be made for the reception of
the stranger, in case it should be true.
The noise of my coming, and my
errand, excited every one's curiosity
to see me arrive; and the day being
come, I hovered over the city a con-
siderable time, to be sure of grounding
right. The king and his daughter,
on the rumour of my appearing, came
forth to view me, and receive me at my
alighting. The people were collected
into a large square, on one side of the
palace, and standing in several clusters
at different places, I judged where the
king might seem most likely to be, and
ordered my bearers to alight there;
but I happened upon the most unlucky
post, as it might have proved, and at
the same time the most lucky I could
have found there; for I had scarce
raised myself from my chair, but Fel-
bamko putting up to me through the
throne, and lifting up a large club he
had in his hand, had certainly dis-
patched me, if I had not at the instant,
drawn a pistol from my girdle, and
shot him dead upon the spot; insomuch,
that the club which was then over my
head, fell gently down on my shoul-
der.
I did not then know who it was I
had killed; but for fear of a fresh at-
tempt, I drew out another pistol and
my cutlars, and enquiring at which
part of the square the king was, I
walked directly up to him, he not as
yet knowing what had happened. His
majesty and his daughter met me, and
welcomed me into his dominions. I
fell at the king's feet, telling him I
brought a message, which I hoped
would excuse my entering his majesty's
dominions without the formality of
obtaining his leave.
When we came to the palace, the
king ordered some refreshments to be
given me and my servants; and then
that I should be conducted to the room
of audience.
The report of Felbamko's death had
reached the palace before us, and that
it was by my hand: this greatly fur-
prized the whole court, but proved
agreeable news to Stygee.
At my entrance into the room of
audience, the king was sitting at the
further end of it against the wall, with
his daughter on his right-hand; and a
seat was placed for me at his left, but
nearer to the middle of the room side-
ways, on which I was ordered to sit
down: there were abundance of the
courtiers present, and above me was a
seat ordered for one of them, who I
found afterwards was one of the re-
ligious.
His majesty asked me aloud how it
happened, that the first moment of my
entering his dominions I should dip my
hands in blood, and that, too, of one,
of his nearest relations.
I then got up to make my answer;
but his majesty ordering me to my seat
again, I told him, that as it was most
certain I knew no one person in his
kingdom, so it could not be supposed
I could have an ill design against any
one, especially against that royal blood,
into whose hands I then came to ren-
der myself; but the truth was, that
what I had done was in preservation
of my own life; for that the perfon
slain had rushed through the crowd
upon me with a great club, intending
to murder me; and that whilst the
blow
Then, he hand it to me, and the king asked, 'Do you feel any pain?'

The king asked if that was the real case, several from the lower end of the room said they were informed it was; and one in particular said he saw the transaction, and I had declared it faithfully. 'Then,' says the king, 'you are acquitted: and, now, what brings you hither? relate your business.'

'Great Sir,' says I, 'it is my peculiar happiness to be appointed Providence as the proposer of a marriage for the princess Stygee, your daughter, with a potent neighbouring monarch; having already been enabled to perform things past belief for his honour. Know then, great Sir, I am a native of the north, and, through infinite perils and hardships, at last arrived in the dominions of Georgiotti, where I have given peace to his state by the death of the usurper Harlokin. I have also just conquered the kingdom of Mount Al-koee for my master, and am here come to make your daughter an offer of both crowns, and also of all that is my master's, with his person in marriage.'

The old priest then rose, and said, 'May it please your majesty, we are almost right: but what has always staggered me, is, how the person should come; for the messenger to us on this errand is to come from above. Now this person has not the grandee, and therefore could not come from thence: as for the rest, I understand the prince from whom he brings this offer to your daughter has the grandee, and so is a male of her own kind; and I understand the two kingdoms in his possession to be the two crowns in the messenger's hands; but, I say, what I flink at is, his coming from above.'

'What,' says Stygee, 'did not you see him come?' — 'No,' says he. 'O,' says she, 'he came in the air, and was a long time over the city before he descended.' — 'That's impossible,' says the old priest; 'for he is smooth, like us.' — 'Indeed, Sir,' says she, 'I saw him, and so did most of the court.' The king and nobles then attesting this truth— 'Sir,' says the priest to the king, 'it is compleated, and your majesty must do the rest.'

'I little expected,' says the king, to see this day—and now, daughter, as this message was designed for you, you only can answer it; but if I must say it surpasses my comprehension, that in the decree of Providence it should be so ordered, that the very hand which brings the accomplishment of what has been so long since foretold by the messenger, should, without design, have first destroyed all that could have rendered the marriage-flate un-comfortable to you.'

Stygee then declared she submitted to fate and her father's will.

I walked here a week to view the country and the sea, which I heard was not far off. Here were many useful beasts for food and burden, fowls also in plenty, and fish near the sea-coasts, and the people eat flesh; so that I thought myself amongst mankind again. I made all the remarks the shortness of the time would allow, and then, taking my leave, departed.

I returned to the colony, where I heard that the Little-landers had been on the coast; but I not being there, or any lading ready, they were gone away again: however, they had detained two of them. I was pleased with that, but sorry they were returned empty.

I examined the prisoners; and, by giving them liberty and good usage, they settled amongst us; and the next fleet that came, the sailors to a man were all my own the moment they could get to shore: this, though I thought it would have spoiled our trade at first, brought the islanders and me to the following compromise, and upon this occasion. Their ships having laid on our coasts one whole season for want of hands to carry them back, I came to an agreement with their commanders, (for they were all willing to return) that such a number of them should be left as hostages with me till the return of a number of my own men, which I should lend them to navigate their ships home; and I sent word to the zaps, that as it might be beneficial to us both to keep the trade still on foot, to prevent the like inconveniences for the future, I would buy their shipping, paying for them in metals, and agree to furnish them yearly with such a quantity of my goods at a stated
At my return to Safs Doorpt Swangeanti, I went directly to the king, and giving him an account of the settlement, and my proceedings thereon, he told me his whole kingdom would not be an equivalent for the services I had done him. I begged of him to look on them in no other light than as flowing from my duty; but if, when I should be no more, he or his children would be gracious to my family, it was all I desired.

'This, father,' says the king, 'I can undertake for myself; but who's to come after me, nobody knows, for I shall never marry. Not Yaccombourfe has given me a surfeit of woman-kind; and unless the states will settle the kingdom on you, to which I will content, it will probably be torn to pieces again by different competitors; for I am the last of the line of Begfurbeck, and of all the blood-royals: and, indeed, who is so proper to maintain it flourishing, as he who has brought it to the present perfection?'

'Great Sir,' says I, 'my ambition rises no higher than to abound in good deeds whilst I live, and to perfect my children in the same principle; and this, I hope, will entitle them to a support when I am gone. But,' says I, 'why is your majesty so adverse from marriage, merely on account of a woman you could not expect to be true to you?'—'Not expect it!' says he; 'what stronger tie upon earth could she have had to be true, than my affection, and all that my kingdom could afford her?'—'Weak things all, Sir,' says I. 'Why, what could she have had? says he, in some warmth. ' Honour, Sir,' says I, 'and virtue, both which she abandoned to become yours; and those once lost, how could you expect her to be true?'

'You are too hard for me, father,' says he; 'but they are all alike, and I don't believe there's a grain of honour in any of them.'—'In any of them like Yaccombourfe, I admit; Sir,' says I; 'but think not so of others, for no part of our species abounds more with it, or is more tender of it, than a good woman; and, take my word for it, Sir, there is more real fincerity in an ordinary wife than in the most extraordinary mistresses. We are all biassed naturally by interest; and as there can be but one real interest between the man and wife, so the interest of a mistress is, and ever will be, only to accommodate herself; for it's all one to her with whom she engages, so she can raise but the market by a change. Now, if your majesty could find an agreeable and virtuous wife, one deriving of your royal person and bed, and perhaps with a kingdom for her dowry, a partner fit to share your cares as well as glory, would it not be a great pleasure to you to be possessed of such a mate; and to see heirs arising under your joint-tuition, to convey down your royal blood to the latest posterity? Would not this, I say, be a grateful reflection to you in your declining years?'

'Truly, father,' says the king, 'as you have painted it, the prospect could not fail to please; and under the circumstances you have put it, it would meet my approbation: but where is such a thing as a woman of this character to be found? I fear only in the imagination.'

'Sir,' says I, after a seeming mufe for some time, 'what should you think of Oniwheske, the king of Norbon's daughter;
daughter; he has but that one child, I hear?—Dear father, have done, says his majesty; to what purpose should you mention her? We but barely know that there is such a state, we have never had an intercourse; and, besides, as you say he has but one child, can you suppose she will ever marry, to leave so fine a kingdom, and live here?—But, Sir, says I, now we are supposing, suppose she should, with her father's consent, be willing to marry you, would you have her for your queen?—To make any doubt of that, father, says he, is almost to suppose me a fool. Then, Sir, says I, her father has consented, and she too; and if I durst have presumed so far, or had known your mind sooner, she would, I believe, have ventured with me to have become yours: but you might have flighted her, and crowned heads are not to be trifled with; but since you are pleased to shew your approbation of it, I can assure you, Sir, her person will yield to none in your majesty's dominions; for, Sir, I have been there, and have seen her, and she is your own, and her kingdom too, upon demand.

Father, says the king, looking earnestly at me; I have been frequently, since I knew you first, in doubt of my own existence; my life seems a dream to me; for if existence is to be judged of by one's faculties only, I have been in such a delusion of them ever since, that as I find myself unable to judge with certainty of any other thing, so I am subject to doubt whether I really exist. Are these things possible that you tell me, father?

I then told him the whole affair, and advised him by all means to accept the offer, and marry the princess out of hand.

His majesty, when I had brought him thoroughly to believe me, was as eager to consummate the marriage, as I was to have him; but then, whether he should go to her, or she come to him, was the question. I told him it was a thing unusual for a sovereign to quit his own dominions for a wife; but would advise an embassy to her father, with notice, that his majesty would meet and espouse her on the frontiers of the two kingdoms.

The ambassadors returning with an appointment of time and place, it was not above a month before I had settled Styge on the thrones of Sa's Doorpt, Swangenti and Mount Alkoe, with the reverence of the kingdom of Norbon, without a competitor.

I shall here give you an account of the marriage-ceremony. The king, being arrived on the borders, Styge, who had waited but a few hours at the last village in Norbon, advanced to his majesty on the very division, as they called it, of the two kingdoms, a line being drawn to express the bounds of each. The king and Styge having talked apart from the company a little space, each standing hand in hand, on their own respective ground, the chief ragan advanced, and began the ceremony.

He first asked each party aloud, if he and she were willing to be united in body and affections, and would engage to continue so their whole lives; to which each party having answered aloud in the affirmative; 'Shew me then a token!' says he; and immediately, each expanding the right side of their grandees, laid it upon the other's left side, so that they appeared then but as one body, standing hand in hand, incased round with the grandee. The ragan then having defied upon the duties of marriage, concluded the ceremony with wishing them as fruitful as Pergen and Philella. So soon as it was over, and the gripfacks and voices had finished an epithalamium, the bride and bridgroom taking wing, were conducted to Brandleguar, amidst the aclamations of an infinite number of Georgietti's subjefts.

The king had made vast preparations for the reception of the princess Styge; and nothing was to be heard or seen but feaflings and rejoicing for many days; and his majesty afterwards assured me of his entire satisfaction in my choice of his bride, without whom he confessed, that notwithstanding the many other blessings I had procured him, his happiness must have been incomplete.

Intending another flight to Norbon, I was charged with the king and queen's compliments to Oniwelke; which having executed, I opened a free trade to Mount Alkoe; and hearing that small vessels came frequently on the Norbonese
Norbonese coast, to carry off the iron and other metals from thence unwrought, and paid part of their return in wrought metals, I ordered some of the next that came to be stopped, and brought to me; and the day before I had fixed for my departure, notice was sent that twelve of those traders were stopped, and in custody at the sea-side: I longed to see them, but then considering that it would take up more time to bring them to Apollo the capital, where I was, than I should take in going to them and returning, I resolved to go and examine them myself. They told me they traded with small vessels to Norbon for metals, which they carried home, and wrought great part of it themselves, sending it to, and dispersing it in, several islands at a distance; and also told the unwrought to several people who carried it they knew not whither in great ships. They said they kept abundance of hands at work in the trade. I asked if their artificers wrought it for their own profit or their masters. They told me for masters, themselves being all slaves. 'And are you all slaves?' says I. They told me 'Yes,' all but one, pointing to him. I then ordered him to be secured and removed; and told them if they would procure some hands to settle at Norbon and Mount Alkoe, they should all be made free, have lands assigned them, and have other privileges, and I did not doubt in time would become the richest men in the country; for I understood by them they were acquainted with the use of money. I asked them what other commodities they brought to Norbon in exchange: they said cloaths for the people, both what they received in exchange from others who bought their iron, and some of a coarser sort of their own making. I found, in my discourse I had with them, that out of my eleven men there were persons of four different occupations; so I promised those who would stay with me their freedoms, good houses, and other rewards; and sending three hands home with the vessel, and a full freight, according to the value of the cargo they brought, I ordered them to engage as many as they could of their countrymen of different trades, to come and settle with me; and to be sure, if they had any grain, corn, roots, plants, or seeds, usually eaten for food, to bring all they could get with them, and they should have good returns for them; and as to those good hands that settled here, they should be allowed all materials to work for their own profit the first year, and after that they should also work for themselves, allowing the king one tenth of the clear profit. This took so far with them, that it was with the utmost difficulty I got any of them to carry the ship back, for fear they should not be able to return. Before I parted from them, I affixed the eight who were left all proper conveniences, and recommended them to the king's protection; and I ordered the owner, then in custody, to be conducted to Mount Alkoe, and from thence to Brandleguarp; where, treating him kindly, and giving him liberty, I made my proper use of him.

The king having lent me a convoy to conduct my prisoner, and given me a license for as many cattle of the forts I chose, as I pleased to drive to Georgetti's dominions, I made them drive a great number of sheep of the finest wool I ever saw, and very large also; a great number of creatures not unlike an ass for shape, but with two upright horns and short ears, which gave abundance of rich milk; and also some swine. All these were drove to, and distributed at, my new colony, where I let them remain till I had provided a proper receptacle for them at Doorpt Swangeanti, near the woods; when I brought many over the black mountain, and distributed there, with directions how to manage them; and in about seven years' time we held a little beast-market near Brandleguarp, twice a year, where the spare cattle were brought up, and preferred in fact till the next market; for I had some years before made large salt-works near the sea at Mount Alkoe, which employed abundance of hands, and was now become a considerable trade.

We had iron, copper, and silver money, which went very current; and had butter and cheese from the farms near the woods, as plenty as we had the fruits before, great numbers of families having settled there; and there was scarce a family but was of some occupation or other.

By the accounts I received from the mines, from time to time, it was prodigious to hear what vast quantities of metals
metals were prepared in one year now, by little above one third of the hands that were usually employed in them before; for now the men's ambition was, to leave a good week's work done at their return, for an example to those who were coming; and the overseers told me, they would sing and work with the greatest delight imaginable, whilst they pleased themselves with telling one another how they intended to spend the next fourteen days.

CHAP. XXII.


ALL things being now so settled, that they would go on of themselves, and having no farther direct view in my head, I spent my time with my wife; and looking over my books one day to divert myself, with the greatest joy imaginable, I found that the Bible I had taken to be in the Portuguese tongue was a Latin one. It was many years since I had thought of that language; but on this occasion, by force of memory and recollection, and with some attention, consideration, and practice, I found it return to me in so plentiful a manner, that I fully resolved to translate my Bible into the Swangeantine tongue.

I sent directly for Laasneel to be my amanuensis; and to work we went upon the translation.

We began at the creation, and descending to the Flood, went on to the Jewish captivity in Egypt, and deliverance by Moses; leaving out the genealogies, and all the Jewish ceremonies and laws, except the Ten Commandments. I translated the Books of Samuel and Kings, down to the Babylonish captivity. I then translated such parts of the Prophets as were necessary to introduce the Mefli-
made a great profit of it, by instructing all who applied to them. This increas of writing necessarily provided a maintenance for several persons who travelled to Norbon for quills, and sold them to the Swangeantines at extravagant rates; till the Norbonefe hearing that, brought them themselves to the foot of the mountain, where the Swangeantines bought them, as they did several other commodities, which one country had, and the other wanted, especially iron wares of almost every denomination; so that the mountain, being so excessively high, was the barrier; for the Norbonefe finding that difficulty in ascending and descending, which the Swangeantines with their grandees did not, there was a constant market of buyers and sellers on the Mountain Alkoe side of the black mountain; which by degrees grew the general mart of the three kingdoms.

I have often reflected with myself, and have been amazed to think, that so ingenious and industrious a people as the Swangeantines have since appeared to be, and who, till I came amongst them, had nothing more than bare food, and a hole to lie in, in a barren rocky country, and then seemed to desire only what they had, should in ten years time, be supplied not only with the conveniences, but superfluities of life; and that they should then become so fond of them, as rather willingly to part with life itself, than be reduced to the state I found them in. And I have as often, on this occasion, reflected on the goodness of Providence, in rendering one part of mankind easy under the abundance of such comforts as others could not rest without; and have made it a great argument for my assent to well-attested truths above my comprehension. For, says I, to have affirmed, at my first coming, either that these things could have been made at all, or when done could have been of any additional benefit to these people, would have been so far beyond their imaginations, that the reporter of so plain a truth, as they now find it, would have been looked upon as a madman or an impostor; but by opening their views by little and little, and shewing them the dependance of one thing upon another, he that should now affirm the univility of them, would be ob-served in a much worse light. And yet, without any embellishments of art, how did this so great a people live under the protection of Providence? Let us first view them at a vast distance from any sort of sustenance, yet from the help of the grandees, that distance was but a step to them. They were forced to inhabit the rocks, from an utter incapacity of providing shelter elsewhere, having no tool that would either cut down timber for an habitation, or dig up the earth for a fence, or materials to make one; but they had a liquor that would dissolve the rock itself into habitations. They had neither beast or fish, for food or burden; but they had fruits equivalent to both, of the same relish, and as wholesome, without shedding blood. Their fruits were dangerous, till they had fermented in a boiling heat; and they had neither the sun, or any fire, or the knowledge how to propagate or continue it. But they had their hot springs always boiling, without their care or concern. They had neither the skins of beasts, the original clothing, or any other artificial covering from the weather; but they were born with that warm clothing the grandee, which being of a considerable density, and full of veins flowing with warm blood, not only defended their flesh from all outward injures, but was a most soft, comely, and warm dres to the body. They lived mostly in the dark rock, having less difference of light with the change of seasons, than other people have; but either by custom or make, more light than what Providence has sent them in the swee-coe, is disagreeable; so that where little is to be obtained, Providence, by confining the capacity, can give content with that; and where apparent wants are, we may see, by these people, how careful Providence is to supply them; for neither the grandee, the sweecos, or their springs, are to be found where those necessaries can be supplied by other means.

Amongst my other considerations, I have often thought, that if I had gone to the top of the black mountains northward of Brandlegharp, in the very lightest time, I might have seen the sun; but these mountains were so elevated,
elevated, that our lightest time was only the gilded glimmering of their tops, having never seen so much light on them as totally to eclipse all the stars; of which we had always the fame in view, but in different positions.

CHAP. XXIII.

PETER'S CHILDREN PROVIDED FOR—YOUWARKEE'S DEATH—HOW THE KING AND QUEEN SPEND THEIR TIME—PETER GROWS MELANCHOLY—WANTS TO GET TO ENGLAND—CONTRIVES MEANS— IS TAKEN UP AT SEA.

I had now been at Brandleguarp ten years; and my children were all provided for by the king but Dickey, as fast as they were qualified for employment, and such as were fit for it were married off to the best alliances in the country; so that I had only to fit down, and see every thing I had put my hand to prosper, and not an evil eye in the three kingdoms cast at me; but about my eleventh or twelfth year, my wife falling into a lingering disorder, at the end of two years it carried her off. This was the first real affliction I had suffered for many years, and so foured my temper, that I became fit for nothing, and it was painful to me even to think of business. The king's marriage had produced four children, three sons and a daughter, which he would frequently tell me were mine.

Old Oniwheke was dead, and the king and queen divided their whole time equally between Brandleguarp and Aphiio: but he was building a palace at my new colony, which by this time was grown to a vast city, and was called Stygenna, in compliment to the queen; and this new palace was designed to receive the court one third of the year, as it lay almost at equal distance between both his other palaces. This method, which his majesty took, at my persuasion, on the death of Oniwheke, though it went against the grain at first, was now grown so habitual to him, and he saw his own interest so much in it, in the love and esteem it procured him from the people, that at last he wanted no spur to it.

My melancholy for the death of my wife, which I hoped time would wear off, rather gained ground upon me; and though I was as much regarded as ever by the whole court, yet it grew troublesome to me even to be asked my advice; and it not only surprized those about me, but even myself, to see the same genius, without any visible natural decay, in so short a time, from the most sprightly and enterprising, become the most phlegmatick and inactive.

My longings after my native country, ever since my wife's death, redoubled upon me, and I had formed several schemes of getting thither, as first, I had formed a project of going off by the islands, as I had so many small vessels at command there, and to get into the main ocean, and try my fortune that way; but, upon enquiry, I found that my vessels could not get to sea, or elsewhere, but to the zaps islands, by reason of the many rocks and sand-banks which would oppose me, unless I went through the zaps country, which, in the light they had reason to view me, I was afraid to do. Then I had thoughts of going from the coast of Norbon; but that must have been in one of the foreign vessels, and they coming from a quite different quarter than I must go, in all probability if I had put to sea any way they were unaccquainted with, they having no compacts, we must have perished; for the more I grew by degrees acquainted with the situation of Dooort Swangeanti, the stronger were my conjectures, that my nearest continent must be the southern coast of America; but still it was only conjecture. At length, being tired and uneasy, I resolved, as I was accustomed to flight, and loved it, I would take a turn for some days, carry me where it would, I should certainly light on some land, whence at worst I could but come back again. I then went to see if my chair, board, and ropes, were found, for I had not used them for several years past; but I found them all so crazy, I durst not venture in them; which disappointment put off my journey for some time. However, as I had still the thought remaining, it put me on seeking some other method to put it in practice: so I contrived the poles from which you took me, being a sort of hollow cane the Swangeantines make their
their spears of, but exceeding strong and springy, which interwoven with small cords, were my seat, and were much lighter than my chair; and these buoyed me up when your goodness relieved me. I had taken Mount Alkoe bearers, as I knew I must come to a country of more light; and I now find, if I had not fallen, I must soon have reached land, if we could have held out; for we were come too far to think of returning, without a resting-place: and what will become of my poor bearers, I dread to think; if they attempted to return, they must have dropt, for they had complained all the last day and night, and had shifted very often. If in your history you think fit to carry down the life of a poor old man any farther, you will as well know what to say of me, as I can tell you; and I hope what I have hitherto said, will in some measure compensate both your expence and labour.
listed:
Neal hit 92, item 128 - $200. (1992)